

SPECIAL CYCLES ON UNITARY SHIMURA VARIETIES II: GLOBAL THEORY

STEPHEN KUDLA

AND

MICHAEL RAPOPORT

Abstract

We introduce moduli spaces of abelian varieties which are arithmetic models of Shimura varieties attached to unitary groups of signature $(n-1, 1)$. We define arithmetic cycles on these models and study their intersection behaviour. In particular, in the non-degenerate case, we prove a relation between their intersection numbers and Fourier coefficients of the derivative at $s = 0$ of a certain incoherent Eisenstein series for the group $U(n, n)$. This is done by relating the arithmetic cycles to their formal counterpart from Part I via non-archimedean uniformization, and by relating the Fourier coefficients to the derivatives of representation densities of hermitian forms. The result then follows from the main theorem of [48] and a counting argument.

1. INTRODUCTION

This paper is the global counterpart to [48]. Our purpose here is to

- introduce moduli spaces of abelian varieties which are arithmetic models of Shimura varieties attached to unitary groups of signature $(n-1, 1)$,
- define arithmetic cycles on these models and
- study the intersection pattern of these arithmetic cycles, and in particular prove in the *non-degenerate* case the relation between their arithmetic intersection numbers and Fourier coefficients of the derivative at $s = 0$ of a certain incoherent Eisenstein series $E(z, s, \Phi)$ for the group $U(n, n)$ that was predicted in §16 of [39].

We now describe our results in more detail. Let \mathbf{k} be an imaginary quadratic field, with ring of integers $O_{\mathbf{k}}$. Let n be a positive integer and let r with $0 \leq r \leq n$. We then consider the moduli space $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$ which parametrizes principally polarized abelian varieties (A, λ) of dimension n with an action $\iota : O_{\mathbf{k}} \rightarrow \text{End}(A)$ of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$. We require that the Rosati involution corresponding to λ induces the non-trivial automorphism of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ and that the representation of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on the Lie algebra of A is equivalent to the sum of

$n - r$ copies of the natural representation and of r copies of the conjugate representation. Hence, for $n = 1$ and $r = 0$ we obtain the usual moduli space \mathcal{M}_0 of elliptic curves with complex multiplication by O_k (these moduli spaces are Deligne-Mumford stacks and not schemes, but we will neglect this fact in the introduction).

The special cycles of interest to us are defined as follows. To a pair (A, ι, λ) , resp. (E, ι_0, λ_0) of objects of $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)$ resp. \mathcal{M}_0 over a common connected base S , we associate the free O_k -module $\text{Hom}_{O_k}(E, A)$ with the positive definite O_k -valued hermitian form given by

$$h'(x, y) = \lambda_0^{-1} \circ y^\vee \circ \lambda \circ x \in \text{End}_{O_k}(E) = O_k .$$

For $m > 0$, let $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_k)_{\geq 0}$ be a positive semi-definite hermitian matrix of size m . The special cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is the moduli space over $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r) \times \mathcal{M}_0$ which parametrizes m -tuples of homomorphism $\mathbf{x} = [x_1, \dots, x_m] \in \text{Hom}_{O_k}(A, E)^m$ such that $h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = (h(x_i, x_j)) = T$. We refer to T as the *fundamental matrix* of the collection \mathbf{x} . After extending scalars from O_k to \mathbb{C} , these cycles coincide with the cycles studied in [42, 44].

These cycles are most interesting in the case when $r = 1$. In this case, when $m = 1$ and $T = t \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$, they are divisors, which for $n = 2$ are essentially identical with the cycles considered by Gross and Zagier [24]. For $m \geq 1$ and $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_k)_{>0}$, the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has codimension m in the generic fiber of $\mathcal{M}(n - 1, 1) \times \mathcal{M}_0$, which has dimension $n - 1$, but may have lower codimension in $\mathcal{M}(n - 1, 1) \times \mathcal{M}_0$, which has dimension n . We call $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_k)_{>0}$ *non-degenerate* if $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has codimension m in $\mathcal{M}(n - 1, 1) \times \mathcal{M}_0$. We are led to study the following intersection problem.

Let $n = \sum_{i=1}^r m_i$ and let $T_i \in \text{Herm}_{m_i}(O_k)$. The intersection (fiber product) of the cycles $\mathcal{Z}(T_i)$ decomposes according to the fundamental matrices into the disjoint sum, comp. [39],

$$\mathcal{Z}(T_1) \times \cdots \times \mathcal{Z}(T_r) = \coprod_{T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_k)} \mathcal{Z}(T) ,$$

where the fiber product is taken over $\mathcal{M}(n - 1, 1) \times \mathcal{M}_0$. Here the matrices T have diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r . The most tractable part of this intersection are the summands corresponding to *nonsingular* matrices $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_k)$. In this case it is easy to see that the support of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is concentrated in finitely many fibers in positive characteristics. We define the contribution of such T to the arithmetic intersection number of *non-degenerate* $\mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r)$ as

$$\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T = \sum_p \chi(\mathcal{Z}(T)_p, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \cdots \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)}) \cdot \log p .$$

Here the derived tensor product appears because the cycles $\mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r)$ do not in general intersect properly, not even along the part $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ corresponding to a non-singular fundamental matrix T . Our main result concerns the case when T itself is *non-degenerate*, i.e. when $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is a finite set of points. In this case, all diagonal blocks occurring in T are automatically non-degenerate. To formulate our main result we must introduce the *incoherent Eisenstein series*.

These series are the analogues for $U(n, n)$ of the incoherent Eisenstein series for $Sp(2n)$ defined and discussed in detail in [39]. To introduce them, we fix a character η of $\mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}}^{\times}/\mathbf{k}^{\times}$ whose restriction to $\mathbb{Q}_{\mathbb{A}}^{\times}$ is the quadratic character associated to \mathbf{k} . (Such a choice determines splittings of metaplectic covers of unitary groups and hence allows us to work on the linear groups.) If V is a hermitian space over \mathbf{k} of dimension n and $\varphi = \otimes_v \varphi_v \in S(V(\mathbb{A})^n)$ is a factorizable Schwartz function on $V(\mathbb{A})^n$, with a suitable K_{∞} -finiteness condition on φ_{∞} , there is a corresponding standard section $\Phi(s) = \Phi_{\varphi}(s) = \otimes_v \Phi_{\varphi_v}(s)$ of the global degenerate principal series representation $I(s, \eta)$ of $U(n, n)$, induced from the character $\eta(\det) |\det|^s$ of the maximal parabolic with Levi factor $GL(n)/\mathbf{k}$ (Siegel parabolic). This section is *coherent* in the sense that it arises from the global hermitian space V . More precisely, at $s = 0$ and for a finite place v non-split in \mathbf{k} , the local degenerate principal series $I_v(0, \eta_v)$ is the direct sum of two irreducible representations $R_n(U_v^{\pm})$ for local hermitian spaces U_v^{\pm} of dimension n over \mathbf{k}_v , where $\chi_v(\det(U_v^{\pm})) = \pm 1$, [51]. The space $R_n(U_v^{\pm})$ is the image of the local Schwartz space $S((U_v^{\pm})^n)$ under the Rallis coinvariant map. At a split finite place, the local degenerate principal series $I_v(0, \eta_v)$ is irreducible. At the archimedean place,

$$I_{\infty}(0, \eta_{\infty}) = \oplus_{0 \leq r \leq n} R_n(n - r, r),$$

where $R_n(n - r, r)$ is the image of the Schwartz space of a hermitian space of signature $(n - r, r)$, [53]. For a global hermitian space V the image $R_n(V)$ of $S(V(\mathbb{A})^n)$ in the global degenerate principal series $I(0, \eta)$ under the map $\varphi \rightarrow \Phi_{\varphi}(0)$ is the irreducible representation

$$R_n(V) = \otimes_v R_n(V_v).$$

This representation is then realized as an automorphic representation of $U(n, n)$ by taking the value at $s = 0$ of the Siegel-Eisenstein series $E(h, s, \Phi_{\varphi})$ formed from a coherent section $\Phi_{\varphi}(s)$. This is a special case of the regularized Siegel-Weil formula, proved in the case of unitary groups by Ichino [32], [33]. There is a second type of irreducible constituent of $I(0, \eta)$ – note that this representation is unitarizable and hence completely reducible. These have the form

$$R_n(\mathcal{C}) = \otimes_v R_n(\mathcal{C}_v),$$

where $\{\mathcal{C}_v\}_v$ is a collection of local hermitian spaces of dimension n such that $\mathcal{C}_v = V_v$ for almost all v , and

$$\prod_v \chi_v(\det(\mathcal{C}_v)) = -1.$$

These constituents of $I(0, \eta)$ and the associated Siegel-Eisenstein series are *incoherent* in the sense that they do not arise from a global hermitian space. For any standard section $\Phi(s)$ with $\Phi(0) \in R_n(\mathcal{C})$, one has $E(h, 0, \Phi) = 0$, and the kernel of the Eisenstein map $E(0)$ from $I(0, \eta)$ to the space of automorphic forms on $U(n, n)$ is precisely the direct sum of the $R_n(\mathcal{C})$'s as \mathcal{C} runs over the incoherent collections.

The incoherent Eisenstein series of interest to us are obtained by fixing a global hermitian space V of signature $(n-1, 1)$ for which there exists a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice L . Such a space will be called a *relevant hermitian space*; the set $\mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ of isomorphism classes of such spaces is finite. Let $\varphi_f \in S(V(\mathbb{A}_f)^n)$ be the characteristic function of $(L \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \widehat{\mathbb{Z}})^n$, and let φ'_∞ be the Gaussian in $S((V'_\infty)^n)$, where V'_∞ has signature $(n, 0)$. The resulting standard global section

$$\Phi(s, L) = \Phi_{\varphi'_\infty}(s) \otimes \Phi_{\varphi_f}(s, L)$$

is incoherent and the corresponding Siegel-Eisenstein series $E(h, s, L)$ depends only on the genus of L , i.e., the orbit of L under the action of $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$, where $G_1^V = U(V)$ is the isometry group of V . There are either one or two genera of self-dual lattices in V ; we denote by $E(h, s, V)$ the sum of the $E(h, s, L)$ as L runs over representatives for the genera. Finally, we let

$$(1.1) \quad E(h, s) = \sum_{V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})} E(h, s, V)$$

be the sum over the isomorphism classes of relevant hermitian spaces. Our main result expresses some of the non-singular Fourier coefficients $E'_T(h, 0)$ of the derivative $E'(h, 0)$ at $s = 0$ in terms of arithmetic intersection numbers of special cycles. For this, it is more convenient to pass to the corresponding classical Eisenstein series $E(z, s)$, as in (9.1), where $z \in D_n$, the hermitian symmetric space for $U(n, n)$. This Eisenstein series has the form, [10], [72], [59],

$$E(z, s) = \det v(z)^{\frac{s}{2}} \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_\infty \backslash \Gamma} \det(cz + d)^{-n} |\det(cz + d)|^{-s} \Phi_f(\gamma, s),$$

where the series is convergent for $\operatorname{Re}(s) > n$. Here $\Gamma = U(n, n) \cap \operatorname{GL}_{2n}(O_{\mathbf{k}})$, Γ_∞ is the subgroup for which lower left $n \times n$ block is zero. The meromorphic analytic continuation and holomorphy on the line $\operatorname{Re}(s) = 0$ follow from Langlands' general results. By the incoherence condition, $E(z, 0) = 0$, and,

as explained in section 9, the Fourier expansion of the central derivative has the form

$$E'(z, 0) = \sum_{T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}} a(T) q^T + \sum_{\substack{T \\ \text{other}}} a(T, v(z)) q^T,$$

where $q^T = \exp(2\pi i \text{tr}(Tz))$. In particular, the terms for positive definite T are holomorphic functions of z .

Theorem 1.1. *Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ be nonsingular with diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r . Let $\text{Diff}_0(T)$ be the set of primes p that are inert in \mathbf{k} for which $\text{ord}_p(\det(T))$ is odd.*

(i) *If $|\text{Diff}_0(T)| \geq 2$, then $\mathcal{Z}(T) = \emptyset$ and $E'_T(z, 0) = 0$.*

(ii) *If $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ with $p > 2$, then T is non-degenerate if and only if it is $\text{GL}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$ -equivalent to $\text{diag}(1_{n-2}, p^a, p^b)$ for some $0 \leq a < b$ with $a+b$ odd. In this case $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has support in the supersingular locus in characteristic p and*

$$\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T = \text{length}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) \cdot \log p.$$

Furthermore, in this case

$$E'_T(z, 0) = E'_T(z, 0, V) = C_1 \cdot \langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T \cdot q^T.$$

for an explicit constant C_1 , independent of T , where $V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ is the unique relevant hermitian space which differs from V_T only at ∞ and p .

Here V_T denotes the space \mathbf{k}^n with hermitian form defined by T .

The strategy of the proof of this theorem is similar to that of the proof of the analogous theorem for Shimura curves [50]. We first prove that for nonsingular $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is either empty or concentrated in the supersingular locus in finitely many characteristics p , where p is not split in \mathbf{k} , and in fact concentrated in characteristic p , if $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$. Then we use the theory of non-archimedean uniformization of [67], to reduce the calculation of the length of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ to a combination of a local calculation on a formal moduli space of p -divisible groups and a point count. The first problem was solved in our previous paper [48]. The second problem is solved here in section 12. It then remains to calculate the Fourier coefficient corresponding to T of the derivative of the incoherent Eisenstein series. For this we use the Siegel-Weil formula established by Ichino [32], [33], in this case. We must ultimately calculate some representation densities for hermitian forms, which is in general a very difficult task, even though a general formula due to Hironaka [27], [28], exists. Fortunately in the non-degenerate case, these calculations are manageable and a direct comparison gives the formula in our main theorem.

We now put our main result in perspective and indicate possible directions of further research. Of course, the model for the results above and in fact the origin of the whole program lies in the theory of special cycles on Shimura varieties attached to orthogonal groups of signature $(n-1, 2)$, and considered for low values of n in our papers [39], [45], [47], [49]. However, as explained in the introduction of [48], there are serious problems with the construction of arithmetic models of these Shimura varieties as soon as $n \geq 6$. By contrast, in the case considered here, which is related to Shimura varieties attached to unitary groups of signature $(n-1, 1)$, manageable arithmetic models exist and can be studied for arbitrary n . In fact, we define such models for unitary groups of arbitrary signature $(n-r, r)$ – but with no level structure. In the case of deeper level structure such arithmetic models can surely also be defined, although results on arithmetic intersection numbers of special cycles will then be harder to come by.

In the case of signature $(n-1, 1)$, the most promising next steps to be taken seem to be the following:

- Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)_{>0}$ with diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r , which are assumed to be non-degenerate. Assuming $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ with $p > 2$ inert in k , prove that $\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T$ is given by the same formula as in the Main Theorem above. To prove this in general, one will have to deal with degenerate intersections, which most probably also requires a better knowledge of the structure of the special cycles outside the supersingular locus.
- Investigate in detail the reduction modulo a ramified prime p of the moduli space $\mathcal{M}(n-1, 1)$ and its supersingular locus and use this to establish results on the arithmetic intersection numbers $\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T$ in the case when $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)_{>0}$ has $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \emptyset$.
- One can define variants of our arithmetic models which involve some parahoric level structure. It should be possible to exploit our considerable knowledge on such models obtained in recent years, [60], [61], [62], [63], to investigate special cycles in this context.

The situation becomes more speculative when $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)$ is singular. In this case one would like to equip the special cycles with appropriate Green forms and define classes in certain arithmetic Chow groups. Then various cup products of these arithmetic cycles should be related to various special values of derivatives of Eisenstein series on unitary groups of type (n, n) . Here the fact that the moduli space $\mathcal{M}(n-1, 1)$ is not proper will play a crucial role. The Eisenstein series we consider in this paper are conjecturally related to the cup product with values in $\widehat{\text{CH}}^n(\mathcal{M}(n-1, 1))$ – but the non-compactness of these moduli spaces prevents us from making this more precise. No doubt the extended versions of arithmetic Chow groups defined by Burgos, Kramer, Kühn [12] will have an impact on these questions.

One may also try to generalize our results in other directions. One may expect similar results when \mathbf{k} is replaced by an arbitrary CM-field. Also, our main results in this paper concern special cycles which lie above

$$\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(n-1, 1) \times \mathcal{M}(1, 0) .$$

However, we define $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ for arbitrary r and one can similarly define more general cycles over more general products. It is a challenge then to determine arithmetic intersection numbers and to form a sensible generating function using them, which can be compared with some automorphic counterpart.

As should be clear from the above description, the investigation of special cycles on unitary Shimura varieties is largely uncharted territory. This also explains why we have made an effort to explain the relation to previous work; we explain in section 3 the precise relation to the cycles in [37, 42, 44] (*KM-cycles*), in section 14 the relation to the cycles (*Heegner points*) considered by Gross and Zagier, and in section 15 how KM-cycles arise in the theory of *occult period mappings*.

We now explain the lay-out of the paper. The paper has five parts.

In Part I, we give the definition of the moduli stack $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and define the special cycles $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ on them. We also show how to uniformize the orbifold of complex points of these stacks in terms of the space of negative r -planes in \mathbb{C}^n , and make the connection between the moduli stacks $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and certain Shimura varieties associated to unitary groups. In particular, this allows us to describe the set of connected components of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)_{\mathbb{C}}$, which is used later in the examples.

In Part II, we describe the completion of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ along the supersingular locus in the fiber of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ at a prime p which is inert in \mathbf{k} , in terms of the formal moduli space of p -divisible groups that was studied extensively in [79]. This p -adic uniformization is essentially just spelling out the general method of [67] in the special case at hand. We also exhibit an analogous p -adic uniformization of the completion of the special cycles along their supersingular locus.

Part III is devoted to the computation of the nonsingular Fourier coefficients of the central derivative of an incoherent Eisenstein series. First, we review the theory of theta integrals for unitary groups and the regularized Siegel-Weil formula, due in this case to Ichino [32], that relates these to special values of certain Eisenstein series for unitary groups. Then, in the incoherent case, the T th Fourier coefficient of the central derivative for a positive definite T is expressed as a product of a representation number of T by a genus of definite lattices and a derivative of a local Whittaker function. The values and derivatives of such Whittaker functions are given in terms

of representation densities for hermitian forms and their derivatives.

In Part IV we prove our main results, by determining explicitly the arithmetic intersection numbers in the non-degenerate case, and by comparing the result with the special values of the derivatives at 0 of the relevant Eisenstein series.

Finally, Part V is devoted to examples and variants of our main result. In particular, we give a more detailed description of the case $n = 2$ and explain the precise relation of our special cycles for $\mathcal{M}(1, 1)$ to those introduced by Gross and Zagier [24]. We also give an exposition from our point of view of the occult period mappings discovered by Allcock, Carlson, Toledo and by Kondo. Here special cycles appear as boundary divisors of the images of these period mappings. We made an effort to make this last section independent of the main body of the paper, so that it can be read by a complex-algebraic geometer who is not interested in the arithmetic theory.

We thank U. Terstiege for helpful discussions. Also, the contents of section 15 was the subject of very helpful discussions with B. van Geemen, D. Huybrechts, and E. Looijenga. This project was started at the Hirschberg conference in 1996 organized by J. Rohlfes and J. Schwermer. We also gratefully acknowledge the hospitality of the Erwin-Schrödinger-Institut, where part of this work was done, and the support of the Hausdorff Center of Mathematics in Bonn. The first author's research was partially supported by an NSERC Discovery Grant.

Notation and conventions

We fix an imaginary quadratic field $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{\Delta})$ with discriminant Δ , ring of integers $O_{\mathbf{k}}$, and nontrivial Galois automorphism $a \mapsto a^{\sigma}$, $a \in \mathbf{k}$. As usual, we denote by $h_{\mathbf{k}}$ the class number and by $w_{\mathbf{k}} = |O_{\mathbf{k}}^{\times}|$ the number of units.

For a hermitian space $V, (\ , \)$ of dimension n over \mathbf{k} , let $\det(V) \in \mathbb{Q}^{\times}/N(\mathbf{k}^{\times})$ be the determinant of the matrix $((v_i, v_j))$ where $\{v_i\}$ is a \mathbf{k} -basis for V . Note that we take $(\ , \)$ to be conjugate linear in the second argument. Define invariants $\text{sig}(V) = (r, s)$, $r + s = n$, and $\text{inv}_p(V) = \chi_p(\det(V))$, where $\chi_p(a) = (a, \Delta)_p$. Here $(\ , \)_p$ is the quadratic Hilbert symbol for \mathbb{Q}_p . Note that $\text{inv}_{\infty}(V) = (-1)^s$ and that $\text{inv}_p(V) = 1$ for all split primes p . For a fixed dimension n , the isometry class of the hermitian space V_p over \mathbf{k}_p (resp. V_{∞} over \mathbb{C}) is determined by $\text{inv}_p(V_p)$ (resp. $\text{sig}(V_{\infty})$). Moreover, the isometry class of V over \mathbf{k} is determined by the collection of its local invariants (Hasse principle) and, for any collection of local hermitian spaces $\{V_p\}$ satisfying the product formula

$$(1.2) \quad \prod_{p \leq \infty} \text{inv}_p(V_p) = 1,$$

there is a unique global hermitian space with the V_p 's as its local completions (Landherr's Theorem).

For a hermitian space V over \mathbf{k} , there is an associated alternating form defined by $\langle x, y \rangle = \text{tr}((x, y)/\sqrt{\Delta})$. Note that, for $a \in \mathbf{k}$, $\langle ax, y \rangle = \langle x, a^\sigma y \rangle$ and that the hermitian form is given by

$$(1.3) \quad 2(x, y) = \langle \sqrt{\Delta} x, y \rangle + \langle x, y \rangle \sqrt{\Delta}.$$

Conversely, if V is a \mathbf{k} -vector space with a \mathbb{Q} -bilinear alternating form $\langle \ , \ \rangle$ satisfying $\langle ax, y \rangle = \langle x, a^\sigma y \rangle$, then (1.3) defines a hermitian form on V . An $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice in V is self-dual for $(\ , \)$ if and only if it is self-dual for $\langle \ , \ \rangle$.

CONTENTS

1. Introduction	1
2. The global moduli problem	10
3. Uniformization of the complex points	19
4. Relation to Shimura varieties	24
5. Uniformization of the supersingular locus	29
6. Special cycles in the supersingular locus	34
7. The theta integral	38
8. The Siegel formula	40
9. The incoherent case	42
10. Representation densities	46
11. The main theorem and a conjecture	52
12. The arithmetic degree in the non-degenerate case	57
13. Level structures	60
14. The case $n = 2$	64
15. Images of period maps	73
References	86

Part I: The global moduli problem and special cycles

2. THE GLOBAL MODULI PROBLEM

2.1. For an integer $n \geq 1$ and a decomposition $n = (n - r) + r$ with $0 \leq r \leq n$, we define a groupoid

$$\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)^{\text{naive}} = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, n - r, r)^{\text{naive}}$$

fibered over $(\text{Sch}/\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}})$ by associating to a locally noetherian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -scheme S the groupoid of triples (A, ι, λ) . Here A is an abelian scheme over S , $\iota : O_{\mathbf{k}} \rightarrow \text{End}_S(A)$ is an action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on A , and $\lambda : A \rightarrow A^\vee$ is a principal polarization such that

$$\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma)$$

for the corresponding Rosati involution $*$. In addition, the following signature condition is imposed:

$$(2.1) \quad \text{char}(T, \iota(a) \mid \text{Lie } A) = (T - a)^{n-r}(T - a^\sigma)^r, \quad a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}.$$

Here the left side is the characteristic polynomial in $\mathcal{O}_S[T]$ of the \mathcal{O}_S -module endomorphism of $\text{Lie } A$ induced by $\iota(a)$ and the right side is the image of a polynomial in $O_{\mathbf{k}}[T]$ under the natural homomorphism $O_{\mathbf{k}}[T] \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_S[T]$. In particular, A is of relative dimension n over S .

A morphism in $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)^{\text{naive}}(S)$ from (A, ι, λ) to (A', ι', λ') is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear isomorphism $\varphi : A \rightarrow A'$ such that $\varphi^*(\lambda') = \lambda$.

Proposition 2.1. $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ is a Deligne-Mumford stack over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$. Furthermore, $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)^{\text{naive}} \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$ is smooth of relative dimension $(n - r)r$ over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$.

Proof. The representability by a DM-stack follows from the representability by a DM-stack of the stack of principally polarized abelian varieties and the relative representability of the forgetful map which forgets the $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action. This relative representability follows from the theory of Hilbert schemes. The smoothness assertion is checked by the infinitesimal criterion for smoothness and Grothendieck-Messing theory [67], [60]. \square

Remark 2.2. A moduli problem of this sort over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$ was considered by Larsen, [52], who also defined a smooth compactification in the case of signature $(2, 1)$.

Example 2.3. Let $n = 1, r = 0$. Then $\mathcal{M}(1, 0)^{\text{naive}}$ parametrizes triples (E, ι_0, λ_0) where (E, ι) is an elliptic curve with complex multiplication by $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ such that the action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on $\text{Lie } E$ is the natural one. In this case, the polarization λ_0 is uniquely determined. The coarse moduli space of $\mathcal{M}(1, 0)^{\text{naive}}$ is $\text{Spec } O_H$ where H is the Hilbert class field of \mathbf{k} . Note that

$\text{End}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E/S, \iota_0) = O_{\mathbf{k}}$ for any $(E, \iota_0, \lambda_0) \in \mathcal{M}(1, 0)^{\text{naive}}(S)$. This example is discussed in [49]. We will abbreviate $\mathcal{M}(1, 0)^{\text{naive}}$ to \mathcal{M}_0 .

We note that there is a natural isomorphism between the moduli stacks $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ and $\mathcal{M}(r, n-r)^{\text{naive}}$ which associates to (A, ι, λ) its conjugate $(A, \bar{\iota}, \lambda)$, where the $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action on A has been changed to its conjugate, i.e., $\bar{\iota}(a) = \iota(a^\sigma)$.

Remark 2.4. As was first pointed out by Pappas, [60], $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ is not flat over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$ for $n \geq 3$. Pappas defines a closed substack of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ by imposing an additional condition as in the following definition.

Definition 2.5. Let $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ be the closed substack of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ consisting of those triples (A, ι, λ) for which the action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on $\text{Lie } A$ satisfies the *wedge condition*:

$$(2.2) \quad \wedge^{n-r+1} (\iota(a) - a) = 0, \quad \wedge^{r+1} (\iota(a) - a^\sigma) = 0.$$

For $n \leq 2$, this condition follows from the signature condition. Furthermore, over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$,

$$(2.3) \quad \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)[\Delta^{-1}] = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}[\Delta^{-1}].$$

Theorem 2.6. (Pappas) *Let $r = 1$, and assume $2 \nmid \Delta$. Then the stack $\mathcal{M}(n-1, 1)$ is flat over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$.*

Proof. This is [60], Theorem 4.5, a). □

Finally, the following stack will play a fundamental role, so that we introduce a symbol for it.

Notation 2.7. For a given fixed collection \mathbf{k}, n, r , we let

$$\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathcal{M}_0$$

be the base change of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)$ to \mathcal{M}_0 .

2.2. For a pair $(E, \iota_0, \lambda_0) \in \mathcal{M}_0(S)$ and $(A, \iota, \lambda) \in \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$, i.e., for an element of $\mathcal{M}(S)$, consider the free $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module of finite rank

$$V'(A, E) = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E, A).$$

On this $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module there is a $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -valued hermitian form given by

$$(2.4) \quad h'(x, y) = \iota_0^{-1}(\lambda_0^{-1} \circ y^\vee \circ \lambda \circ x) \in O_{\mathbf{k}}.$$

where $y^\vee : E^\vee \rightarrow A^\vee$ denotes the dual homomorphism.

Lemma 2.8. *The hermitian form h' on $V'(A, E)$ is positive-definite.*

Proof. Consider the endomorphism $\alpha \in \text{End}(E \times A)$ given by

$$\alpha = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \lambda_0^{-1} x^\vee \lambda \\ x & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

The adjoint α^* with respect to the polarization (λ_0, λ) of $E \times A$ is $\alpha^* = \alpha$. Hence

$$\alpha\alpha^* = \text{diag}(\lambda_0^{-1} x^\vee \lambda x, x \lambda_0^{-1} x^\vee \lambda) \in \text{End}(E) \times \text{End}(A).$$

The positivity of the Rosati involution implies that the first entry of this diagonal matrix is positive, as had to be shown. \square

Definition 2.9. Let $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_k)$ be an $m \times m$ hermitian matrix, $m \geq 1$, with coefficients in O_k . The *special cycle* $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ attached to T is the stack of collections $(A, \iota, \lambda, E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x})$ where $(A, \iota, \lambda) \in \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$, $(E, \iota_0, \lambda_0) \in \mathcal{M}_0(S)$, and $\mathbf{x} = [x_1, \dots, x_m] \in \text{Hom}_{O_k}(E, A)^m$ is an m -tuple of homomorphisms such that

$$(2.5) \quad h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = (h'(x_i, x_j)) = T.$$

Proposition 2.10. $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is representable by a DM-stack. The natural morphism $\mathcal{Z}(T) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}$ is finite and unramified.

Proof. Given an S -valued point $(A, \iota, \lambda, E, \iota_0, \lambda_0)$ of \mathcal{M} , the functor $\underline{\text{Hom}}_{O_k}(E, A)$ on (Sch/S) defined by

$$T \rightsquigarrow \text{Hom}_{O_k}(E \times_S T, A \times_S T)$$

is representable by a scheme which is unramified over S (by rigidity) and satisfies the valuative criterion for properness (by the Néron property of abelian schemes). The finiteness now follows, since, by the positive definiteness of h' , the set

$$\{ \mathbf{x} \in \text{Hom}_{O_k}(E, A)^m \mid h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T \}$$

is finite. \square

2.3. There is an obvious Tate module variant of the hermitian space $V'(A, E)$. Let F be an algebraically closed field of characteristic p and let

$$(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0) \in \mathcal{M}(F).$$

Denoting by $T^p(A)^0$, resp. $T^p(E)^0$ the rational Tate modules prime to p of A resp. E , let

$$V'_{\mathbb{A}_f^p} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E)^0, T^p(A)^0),$$

with hermitian form

$$h'(x, y) = \iota_0^{-1}(\lambda_0^{-1} \circ y^\vee \circ \lambda \circ x) \in \mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p.$$

Then the natural embedding $V'(A, E) \rightarrow V'_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}$ is isometric. On the other hand, the hermitian form $h'(\ , \)$ on $V'_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}$ is related to the Weil pairing as

follows. We fix an isomorphism $\mathbb{A}_f^p(1) \simeq \mathbb{A}_f^p$. Then the natural pairing e_A takes values in \mathbb{A}_f^p ,

$$e_A : T^p(A)^0 \times T^p(A^\vee)^0 \longrightarrow \mathbb{A}_f^p,$$

and there is an hermitian form $h = h_\lambda$ on $T^p(A)^0$ given by

$$2 h_\lambda(x, y) = e_A(\delta x, \lambda(y)) + \delta e_A(x, \lambda(y)),$$

where $\delta = \sqrt{\Delta}$.

The same construction can be made with E in place of A . The hermitian forms h_λ and h_{λ_0} define a hermitian structure $h(\cdot, \cdot)$ on $\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E)^0, T^p(A)^0)$, which is independent of the trivialization of $\mathbb{A}_f^p(1)$. Hence we may replace the base scheme $\text{Spec } F$ by any connected scheme S .

Lemma 2.11. *The two hermitian forms $h'(\cdot, \cdot)$ and $h(\cdot, \cdot)$ on*

$$\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E)^0, T^p(A)^0)$$

are identical.

Proof. We choose an identification of $T^p(E)^0$ with $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$, i.e., a basis vector 1 in $T^p(E)^0$. We calculate for $x, y \in \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E)^0, T^p(A)^0)$

$$\begin{aligned} 2 h_\lambda(x(1), y(1)) &= e_A(\delta x(1), \lambda(y(1))) + \delta e_A(x(1), \lambda(y(1))) \\ &= e_E(\delta, x^\vee \lambda y(1)) + \delta e_E(1, x^\vee \lambda y(1)) \\ &= 2 h_{\lambda_0}(1, \lambda_0^{-1} x^\vee \lambda y(1)) \\ &= 2 h'(x, y) h_{\lambda_0}(1, 1). \end{aligned}$$

This proves the claim. \square

2.4. We define the set $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$ of *relevant hermitian spaces* of dimension n over \mathbf{k} as the set of isomorphism classes of hermitian spaces V with $\text{sig}(V) = (n-r, r)$ and which contain a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice.

Lemma 2.12. (i) *The cardinality of $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$ is*

$$|\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})| = 2^{\delta-1},$$

where δ is the number of primes that ramify in \mathbf{k} , i.e., the number of distinct prime divisors of Δ .

(ii) *The number of strict similarity classes of relevant hermitian spaces is*

$$|\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})/\text{str.sim.}| = \begin{cases} 2^{\delta-1} & \text{if } n \text{ is even,} \\ 1 & \text{if } n \text{ is odd.} \end{cases}$$

Here by a strict similarity we mean a similarity such that the scale factor is positive.

Proof. By the Hasse principle, the isomorphism class of a hermitian space is determined by its localizations. The existence of a self-dual lattice is equivalent to the condition that the determinant $\det(V)$ lies in $\mathbb{Z}_p^\times N(\mathbf{k}_p^\times)$ for all finite primes p . For split and ramified primes, this local condition is automatic, while, for inert primes it is equivalent to $\text{inv}_p(V) = (\det V, \Delta)_p = 1$. Since the signature is also fixed, the relevant spaces are determined by the collection of signs $\text{inv}_p(V)$ for $p \mid \Delta$, and any collection of signs is realized, subject to the condition that

$$\text{inv}_\infty(V) = \prod_{p \mid \Delta} \text{inv}_p(V).$$

Here note that $\text{inv}_\infty(V) = (-1)^r$. This proves (i).

To prove (ii), note that the determinants of similar spaces differ by the n th power of the scale factor. Thus, for n even, two hermitian spaces are similar if and only if they are isomorphic, while, for n odd, two relevant hermitian spaces are locally similar by a unit at each ramified prime and hence are globally similar, by the Hasse principle for similitudes. \square

Proposition 2.13. (i) *There is a natural disjoint decomposition of algebraic stacks*

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r) = \coprod_{V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})/\text{str.sim.}} \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^V.$$

(ii) *There is a natural disjoint decomposition of algebraic stacks*

$$\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathcal{M}_0 = \coprod_{V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})} \mathcal{M}^V.$$

For n even, this decomposition is obtained by base change from that in (i).

Remark 2.14. Of course, for n odd, part (i) is trivial, since there is only one strict similarity class of relevant V 's.

Proof. Let (A, ι, λ) in $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$ for a connected base S . Let $s : \text{Spec } F \rightarrow S$ be a geometric point of S . First suppose that F has characteristic zero, and choose an isomorphism $\hat{\mathbb{Z}}(1) \xrightarrow{\sim} \hat{\mathbb{Z}}$ over F . We obtain from the pull-back $\xi = \xi(s)$ to F of (A, ι, λ) the rational Tate module $T(A)^0$ with its Riemann form $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_\lambda$ associated to the polarization λ . This satisfies $\langle ax, y \rangle_\lambda = \langle x, a^\sigma y \rangle_\lambda$ and hence determines a hermitian form $(\cdot, \cdot)_\lambda$ by (1.3). Hence we obtain a hermitian space \mathcal{V} over $\mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{A}_f$ with a self-dual lattice given by the Tate module of (A, ι, λ) . We claim that there is a unique element $V(\xi)$ in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ which after tensoring with \mathbb{A}_f gives the hermitian space \mathcal{V} . The uniqueness is clear by the Hasse principle and the product formula. For the existence, note that the point ξ arises, via base change, from a point $\xi_0 \in \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(F_0)$ for a subfield $F_0 \subset F$ which is finitely

generated over the prime field and hence has a complex embedding. If F has a complex embedding $F \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, let $V(\xi) = H_1(A_{\mathbb{C}}, \mathbb{Q})$ be the rational homology of the corresponding complex abelian variety, which, by the same argument as above, is a hermitian vector space over \mathbf{k} . By the signature condition, the space $V(\xi)$ has signature $(n-r, r)$, and by the compatibility between singular homology and Tate module, $V(\xi) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f = \mathcal{V}$. Thus $V(\xi) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$.

Next, suppose that F has characteristic $p > 0$, and choose an isomorphism $\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p(1) \xrightarrow{\sim} \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$ over F . We obtain a hermitian space \mathcal{V}^p over $\mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{A}_f^p$ with a self-dual lattice. There exists a unique hermitian space $V(\xi)$ with $V(\xi) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p \simeq \mathcal{V}^p$ and with $\text{sig}(V(\xi)) = (n-r, r)$. We claim that $V(\xi) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$. If p is ramified or split in \mathbf{k} , the space $V(\xi)_p$ always has a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p$ -lattice, so that $V(\xi) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$. If p is inert in \mathbf{k} , we use the fact that $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ is smooth at p . Hence there exists a point $\tilde{\xi} = (\tilde{A}, \tilde{\iota}, \tilde{\lambda}) \in \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(W(F))$ lifting ξ , where $W(F)$ is the ring of Witt vectors. Then

$$T^p(A)^0 = T^p(\tilde{A})^0 = V(\tilde{\xi}) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{A}_f^p,$$

as hermitian spaces over $\mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{A}_f^p$. Also, by the previous argument, $V(\tilde{\xi})$ has signature $(n-r, r)$, so that $V(\xi)$ and $V(\tilde{\xi})$ are locally isomorphic at all places other than p . Hence $V(\xi)_p \simeq V(\tilde{\xi})_p$ as well and this space has a self-dual $\mathbb{Z}_p \otimes O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice. Again, we conclude that $V(\xi) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$.

The space $V(\xi)$ attached above to (A, ι, λ) depends on the choice of the geometric point s of S , on the complex embedding, and on the trivialization of the group of roots of unity. A change in these choices changes the space $V(\xi)$ within a strict similarity class, as we check below. However, if (A, ι, λ) and (E, ι_0, λ_0) are points of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and \mathcal{M}_0 over S , then attaching as above the hermitian spaces $V(\xi)$ to (A, ι, λ) and $V(\xi_0)$ to (E, ι_0, λ_0) , the hermitian space $V = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V(\xi_0), V(\xi)) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ is independent of all choices. Indeed, if the trivialization $\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p(1) \simeq \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$ of the prime-to- p roots of unity is changed by a scalar $c \in (\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p)^{\times}$, then $V(\xi) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ and $V(\xi_0) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ are both scaled by the same scalar c , hence $V \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V(\xi_0), V(\xi)) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ is unchanged. Since the archimedean localization of V is determined by the signature condition, the product formula and the Hasse principle imply that V is unchanged in its isometry class. Similarly, if two geometric points s and s' have the same image in S , then $V(\xi) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ and $V(\xi') \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ are scales of one another by the scalar $c \in (\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p)^{\times}$ which compares the corresponding trivializations of the prime-to- p roots of unity; the same applies to $V(\xi_0) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ and $V(\xi'_0) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$, hence $\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V(\xi_0), V(\xi)) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p \simeq \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V(\xi'_0), V(\xi')) \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$, and we conclude as before by the product formula and the Hasse principle. The same argument takes care of the change of the complex embedding.

The independence of the image point in S of the chosen geometric point is proved by using the specialization homomorphism from a generic geometric point.

This defines the claimed disjoint decomposition in (ii), and also proves (i). \square

Over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\frac{1}{2}]$, a slight refinement of the decomposition of Proposition 2.13 will be useful. For a relevant hermitian space V , let $G_1^V = \text{U}(V)$ be the isometry group. Then $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ acts on the set of self dual lattices in V by $g : L \mapsto V \cap (g(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}))$. The orbit of a lattice L is the G_1^V -genus of L ; we denote it by $[[L]]$. The following result, due to Jacobowitz [34], sections 9 and 10, describes the orbits.

Proposition 2.15. ([34]) *Suppose that V_p is a non-degenerate hermitian space of dimension n over $\mathbf{k}_p/\mathbb{Q}_p$ and that V_p contains a self-dual lattice. Then the unitary group $\text{U}(V_p)$ acts transitively on the set of self-dual lattices in V_p except in the following cases:*

- (a) $p = 2$, \mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}_p is ramified, $n = \dim V_p$ is even and V_p is a split space.
- (b) $p = 2$, $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}_p(\sqrt{\Delta})$ where $\text{ord}_2(\Delta) = 3$, $n = \dim V_p$ is even and V_p is the sum of a 2-dimensional anisotropic space and a split space of dimension $n - 2$.

Then there are two $\text{U}(V_p)$ -orbits of self-dual lattices in V_p .

Remark 2.16. (i) Explicit representatives for the two orbits can be given as follows. Let $H(0)$ be the hyperbolic plane, i.e., 2-dimensional space with $O_{\mathbf{k},p}$ -basis e, f and $(e, f) = 1$, $(e, e) = (f, f) = 0$. Note that the \mathbb{Z}_p -ideal generated by the set of values (x, x) , $x \in H(0)$ is then $\text{tr}(O_{\mathbf{k},p}) = 2\mathbb{Z}_2$. Let $\dim V_p = n = 2k$. In case (a), the orbit representatives are $H(0)^k$ and $\text{diag}(1, -1) \oplus H(0)^{k-1}$. In case (b), take $\kappa \in \mathbb{Z}_2^\times$ such that κ is not a norm from \mathbf{k}_p . There is then a unit $\lambda \in O_{\mathbf{k},2}^\times$ with $N(\lambda) - \kappa \in 4\mathbb{Z}_2$. This element is unique modulo $2O_{\mathbf{k},2}$. Write $\Delta = 4d$ with $d \in 2\mathbb{Z}_2$. Then the $O_{\mathbf{k},2}$ -lattice $D(0)$ of rank 2 with hermitian form defined by

$$\begin{pmatrix} -d & \lambda^\sigma \\ \lambda & \frac{\kappa - N(\lambda)}{d} \end{pmatrix}$$

is unimodular, anisotropic, and has $(x, x) \in 2\mathbb{Z}_2$ for all $x \in D(0)$. The orbit representatives in case (b) are $D(0) \oplus H(0)^{k-1}$ and $\text{diag}(1, -\kappa) \oplus H(0)^{k-1}$.

(ii) By analogy with the case of symmetric bilinear forms, [69], we will call a self-dual (unimodular) hermitian lattice type II if the values (x, x) for $x \in L$ are all even and type I otherwise.

(iii) By Proposition 10.4 of [34], for a quadratic extension E/F of local fields of characteristic zero and residue characteristic 2, the isometry class of a unimodular hermitian lattice L is determined by the rank, the determinant

$\det(L) \in F^\times / N(E^\times)$ and the O_F -ideal $\mu(L)$ generated by the values (x, x) for $x \in L$. This ideal has the form \mathcal{P}_F^r with $r \geq 0$ and contains the ideal $\text{tr}(O_E) \supset 2O_F$. Thus, the number of isometry classes can grow with $\text{ord}_F(2)$.

Corollary 2.17. *For a relevant hermitian space V in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$, the number of G_1^V -genera of self-dual lattices in V is 2 or 1 depending on whether or not one of the exceptional cases (a) and (b) occurs at the prime $p = 2$.*

The following fact will also be useful.

Lemma 2.18. *Let*

$$G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)^0 = \{ g \in \mathbb{G}(\mathbb{A}_f) \mid \nu(g) \in \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \}.$$

Then the orbit of a self-dual lattice under the action of $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)^0$ is the same as the orbit under $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$.

Proof. The only issue is to show that, in the case where there are two $G_1^V(\mathbb{Q}_2)$ -orbits of self-dual lattices in V_2 , the action of $G^V(\mathbb{Q}_2)^0$ preserves these orbits. But if $g \in G^V(\mathbb{Q}_2)^0$, and L is a self-dual lattice in V_2 , then the ideals $\mu(L)$ and $\mu(gL)$ in \mathbb{Z}_2 generated by the values (x, x) for $x \in L$ (resp. gL) are the same. By Proposition 10.4 of [34], cf. Remark 2.16, L and gL are isometric. \square

Definition 2.19. Let $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ be the set of isomorphism classes of pairs $V^\sharp := (V, [[L]])$ where V is a relevant hermitian space and $[[L]]$ is a G_1^V -genus of self-dual hermitian lattices in V .

The G_1^V -genus is determined by its type, as defined in (ii) of the preceding remark. Of course, if n is odd or if n is even and 2 is unramified in \mathbf{k} , all self-dual lattices are of type I and the natural map from $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ to $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$ is a bijection.

We write

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)\left[\frac{1}{2}\right] = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}\left[\frac{1}{2}\right]$$

and

$$\mathcal{M}\left[\frac{1}{2}\right] = \mathcal{M} \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}\left[\frac{1}{2}\right].$$

Proposition 2.20. (i) *There is a natural disjoint decomposition of algebraic stacks*

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)\left[\frac{1}{2}\right] = \coprod_{V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp / \text{str.sim.}} \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)\left[\frac{1}{2}\right]^{V^\sharp}.$$

(ii) *There is a natural disjoint decomposition of algebraic stacks*

$$\mathcal{M}[\frac{1}{2}] = \coprod_{V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp} \mathcal{M}[\frac{1}{2}]^{V^\sharp}.$$

For n even, this decomposition is obtained by base change from that in (i).

Proof. Away from characteristic 2, the Tate module $T_2(A)$ is a unimodular $O_{\mathbf{k},2}$ -lattice where, as explained in the proof of Proposition 2.13, the hermitian form is well defined up to scaling by an element of \mathbb{Z}_2^\times . The norm, $\mu(T_2(A))$, of this lattice is thus well defined and hence so is the type of the genus of self-dual lattices in V determined by $T^p(A)$. \square

We will frequently abuse notation and write $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}$ and \mathcal{M}^{V^\sharp} instead of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)[\frac{1}{2}]^{V^\sharp}$ and $\mathcal{M}[\frac{1}{2}]^{V^\sharp}$ when working away from characteristic 2.

2.5. We next obtain some information about the support of the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$.

Lemma 2.21. *If $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ for $m > n-r$, then $\mathcal{Z}(T)_{\mathbb{Q}} = \emptyset$.*

Proof. Obviously, it suffices to prove that $\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C}) = \emptyset$, and this is part of Corollary 3.6. \square

We now assume that the matrix T is nonsingular of rank n . In this case more can be said.

Lemma 2.22. *Let $0 < r < n$. Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$. Then $\text{supp}(\mathcal{Z}(T))$ is contained in the union over finitely many inert or ramified p of the supersingular locus of \mathcal{M}_p .*

Proof. Since T is nonsingular, any point $(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x})$ of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ defines an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -isogeny $E^n \rightarrow A$. Over \mathbb{C} such an isogeny cannot exist since the representations of $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{C}$ on $(\text{Lie } E)^n$ and on $\text{Lie } A$ are non-isomorphic by the determinant condition. Hence $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is concentrated in the fibers at p for finitely many p . Furthermore, if p is inert or ramified, then E is supersingular and hence so is A .

It remains to exclude the case of split primes p . In this case, it can happen that an isogeny $\varphi : E^n \rightarrow A$ does not induce an isomorphism on the Lie algebras. However, there is an $\alpha \in \text{GL}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}}) \hookrightarrow \text{Aut}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E^n)$ such that

$$\varphi \circ \alpha = \varphi' \circ (\text{Frob}^{i_1}, \dots, \text{Frob}^{i_n}),$$

for suitable powers of the Frobenius endomorphism of E and with an isogeny $\varphi' : E^n \rightarrow A$, such that φ' induces an isomorphism on the Lie algebras. Then the previous argument yields a contradiction to the condition $0 < r < n$. \square

In the case of signature $(n-1, 1)$ one can go a bit further.

Proposition 2.23. *Let $r = 1$ and suppose that $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$. Let V_T denote the positive-definite hermitian space $V_T = \mathbf{k}^n$ with hermitian form given by T . Let $\text{Diff}_0(T)$ be the set of primes p that are inert in \mathbf{k} for which $\text{ord}_p(\det(T))$ is odd.*

(i) *If $|\text{Diff}_0(T)| > 1$, then $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is empty.*

(ii) *If $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$, then*

$$\text{supp}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) \subset \mathcal{M}_p^{V, \text{ss}},$$

where $V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ is the unique relevant hermitian space with $\text{inv}_\ell(V) = \text{inv}_\ell(V_T)$ for all finite primes $\ell \neq p$.

Here $\mathcal{M}_p^{V, \text{ss}}$ denotes the supersingular locus in the fiber of \mathcal{M}^V at p .

(iii) *If $\text{Diff}_0(T)$ is empty, then, for each $p \mid \Delta$, there is a unique relevant hermitian space $V^{(p)} \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ for which $\text{inv}_\ell(V^{(p)}) = \text{inv}_\ell(V_T)$ for all $\ell \neq p$. Then*

$$\text{supp}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) \subset \bigcup_{p \mid \Delta} \mathcal{M}_p^{V^{(p)}, \text{ss}}.$$

Proof. Let $p \in \text{Diff}_0(T)$, and let $(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x}) \in \mathcal{Z}(T)(\bar{\mathbb{F}}_p)$. Let $V' = V'(E, A)$. Then V' can be identified with V_T , and the natural map

$$V' \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p \rightarrow V'_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}$$

is an isomorphism. On the other hand, by Lemma 2.3, $V'_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}$ can be identified with $\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E)^0, T^p(A)^0)$ and therefore admits a self-dual $\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$ -lattice. Hence $\text{ord}_\ell(\det(T))$ is even for all inert $\ell \neq p$. This proves (i), and (ii) and (iii) follow from this and the previous lemma. \square

3. UNIFORMIZATION OF THE COMPLEX POINTS

In this section, we fix an embedding τ of \mathbf{k} into \mathbb{C} and discuss the complex points of our moduli spaces $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and of the special cycles.

3.1. Let $V, (\ , \)$ be a hermitian vector space over \mathbf{k} of signature $(n-r, r)$. Let $G = G^V = \text{GU}(V)$ be the similitude group of V , viewed as a reductive algebraic group over \mathbb{Q} . Thus, for any \mathbb{Q} -algebra R ,

$$G(R) = \{ g \in \text{End}_{\mathbf{k}}(V) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R \mid gg^* = \nu(g) \in R^\times \},$$

where $*$ is the involution on $\text{End}(V)$ determined by $(\ , \)$. Let $G_1 = \text{U}(V)$.

We note that

$$\nu(G(\mathbb{R})) = \begin{cases} \mathbb{R}^\times & \text{for signature } (r, r), \\ \mathbb{R}_+^\times & \text{for signature } (n-r, r), \text{ with } r \neq n-r. \end{cases}$$

This fact distinguishes the case $n - r \neq r$ from the case $n - r = r$.

Let us first assume that $r \neq n - r$. Let $\mathbf{h} : \mathbb{C} \rightarrow \text{End}_{\mathbf{k}}(V) \otimes \mathbb{R}$ be an \mathbb{R} -algebra homomorphism such that $\mathbf{h}(z)^* = \mathbf{h}(\bar{z})$, and such that the form $\langle \mathbf{h}(i)x, y \rangle$ is symmetric and positive definite on $V \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}$. Note that $\mathbf{h}(z)\mathbf{h}(z)^* = \nu(\mathbf{h}(z)) = |z|^2$, so that $\mathbf{h} : \mathbb{C}^\times \rightarrow G(\mathbb{R})$. Let J_0 be the complex structure on $V_{\mathbb{R}} = V \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}$ given by multiplication by $\sqrt{\Delta} \otimes |\Delta|^{-\frac{1}{2}}$. For a homomorphism \mathbf{h} as above, let U be the subspace of $V_{\mathbb{R}}$ on which $\mathbf{h}(i) = -J_0$. Then U is a complex r -plane in $(V_{\mathbb{R}}, J_0)$ on which the hermitian form $(\ , \)$ is negative definite, and every such r -plane arises in this way. Note that $\mathbf{h}(i) = J_0$ on the positive $n - r$ -plane U^\perp . Thus, we can identify the space of homomorphisms $\mathbf{h} : \mathbb{S} \rightarrow G(\mathbb{R})$ with the space $D = D(V)$ of negative r -planes in $(V_{\mathbb{R}}, J_0)$. The subspace of $V_{\mathbb{C}}$ on which $\mathbf{h}(z)$ acts by z is isomorphic, as a representation of \mathbf{k} , to $(n - r) \cdot \tau + r \cdot \bar{\tau}$.

In the case of signature (r, r) , the form $\langle \mathbf{h}(i)x, y \rangle$ is only required to be symmetric and definite on $V \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}$, and we define $\text{sgn}(\mathbf{h}) = \pm 1$ so that $\text{sgn}(\mathbf{h}) \langle \mathbf{h}(i)x, x \rangle \geq 0$. On the complex r -plane U in $V(\mathbb{R})$ on which $\mathbf{h}(i) = -J_0$, the hermitian form $\text{sgn}(\mathbf{h}) (\ , \)$ is negative definite, and we may identify the space of homomorphisms $\mathbf{h} : \mathbb{S} \rightarrow G(\mathbb{R})$ with $D = D^+ \cup D^-$, where D^ϵ is the space of r -planes that are negative for $\epsilon (\ , \)$.

3.2. Next, we describe the complex points of $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)$. Let $\mathcal{L}_{(n - r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ be the set of isomorphism classes of self-dual hermitian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattices of signature $(n - r, r)$. There is a natural surjective map $L \mapsto L \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ from $\mathcal{L}_{(n - r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ to $\mathcal{R}_{(n - r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$. We fix representatives V for $\mathcal{R}_{(n - r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ and a compatible set of representatives L for $\mathcal{L}_{(n - r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$. We will write $D(L) = D(L \otimes \mathbb{Q})$ for the corresponding space of negative r -planes. We also fix the trivialization $\mathbb{A}_f(1) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{A}_f$ given by the exponential map $\mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mu_n(\mathbb{C})$, $a \mapsto e(a/n)$, for $e(x) = \exp(2\pi i x)$.

Suppose that (A, ι, λ) is an element of $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)(\mathbb{C})$, and let $H = H_1(A, \mathbb{Z})$. Then, via ι , H is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice of rank n with an alternating form $\langle \ , \ \rangle_\lambda$ determined by the polarization λ . Since the adjoint with respect to $\langle \ , \ \rangle_\lambda$ is given by $\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma)$, there is a $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -valued hermitian form $(\ , \) = (\ , \)_{\lambda, \mathbf{k}}$ on H such that $\langle x, y \rangle_\lambda = \text{tr}((x, y)/\sqrt{\Delta})$, as in (1.3). Since the polarization λ is principal, the $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice H is self dual with respect to $(\ , \)_{\lambda, \mathbf{k}}$. By the signature condition and the canonical isomorphism $H_{\mathbb{R}} = H \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{R} = \text{Lie}(A)$, the hermitian lattice H has signature $(n - r, r)$. Choose an isomorphism $j : H \rightarrow L$, where L is one of our fixed representatives. Via j the complex structure on $H_{\mathbb{R}}$ corresponds to $\mathbf{h}_z(i)$ for some $z \in D(L)$. Now we eliminate the choice of j ; since any two choices of j differ by an element of Γ_L , the group of isometries of L , we obtain the following result.

Proposition 3.1. *There is an isomorphism of orbifolds*

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_L [\Gamma_L \backslash D(L)],$$

where L runs over $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$.

Consider the special case $n = 1$ and $r = 0$. A fractional ideal \mathfrak{a} defines a self-dual hermitian lattice $L_{0, \mathfrak{a}}$ in the space $V_{0, \mathfrak{a}} = \mathbf{k}$ with hermitian form $(x, y) = N(\mathfrak{a})^{-1} xy^\sigma$. This gives an isomorphism

$$(3.1) \quad C(\mathbf{k}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{L}_{(1, 0)}(\mathbf{k}), \quad [\mathfrak{a}] \mapsto [L_{0, \mathfrak{a}}],$$

where $C(\mathbf{k})$ is the ideal class group of \mathbf{k} and $[L_{0, \mathfrak{a}}]$ denotes the isomorphism class of $L_{0, \mathfrak{a}}$. Since $D(L_{0, \mathfrak{a}})$ consists of a single point and $\Gamma_{L_{0, \mathfrak{a}}} = O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times$, we obtain

$$(3.2) \quad \mathcal{M}_0(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_{[\mathfrak{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} [O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times \backslash D(L_{0, \mathfrak{a}})] \simeq [O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times \backslash C(\mathbf{k})],$$

where $O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times$ acts trivially on $D(L_{0, \mathfrak{a}})$ and $C(\mathbf{k})$.

There is a slight variant of Proposition 3.1. Consider the map $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k}) \longrightarrow \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ given by $L \mapsto (L \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}, [[L]])$. By construction, the fiber in $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ over $(V, [[L]]) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ is in bijection with

$$G_1^V(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f) / K_1^V,$$

where K_1^V is the stabilizer in $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ of a self-dual lattice in $[[L]]$.

Corollary 3.2. *There is an isomorphism of orbifolds*

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_{V^\sharp} [G_1^V(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash (D(V) \times G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f) / K_1^{V^\sharp})],$$

where V^\sharp runs over $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$. □

When n is odd, we will usually drop the \sharp here. On the other hand, when there are two G_1^V -genera, the group $K_1^{V^\sharp}$ depends on V^\sharp , not just on V .

Remark 3.3. In the special case $n = 1$ and $r = 0$, the decomposition

$$\mathcal{M}_0(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_{V_0} [G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash (D(V_0) \times G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f) / K_1^{V_0})]$$

in Corollary 3.2 corresponds to the decomposition of $C(\mathbf{k})$ according to genera. More precisely, the isomorphism class of the hermitian space $V_{0, \mathfrak{a}} = L_{0, \mathfrak{a}} \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is determined by the values $\chi_p(\det V_{0, \mathfrak{a}}) = \chi_p(N(\mathfrak{a})) = (N(\mathfrak{a}), \Delta)_p$ as p runs over the primes dividing Δ . But these are just the values of the genus characters $\xi_p([\mathfrak{a}]) = (N(\mathfrak{a}), \Delta)_p$. Thus the fibers of the map $C(\mathbf{k}) \simeq \mathcal{L}_{(1, 0)}(\mathbf{k}) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}_{(1, 0)}(\mathbf{k})$ are the genera, i.e., the cosets of the subgroup

$C(\mathbf{k})^2$. More explicitly, the inclusion of $\mathbf{k}^1 \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^1 / \widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^1$ into $\mathbf{k}^\times \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^\times / \widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^\times = C(\mathbf{k})$ identifies

$$G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f) / K_1^{V_0} = \mathbf{k}^1 \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^1 / \widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^1$$

with $C(\mathbf{k})^2$.

Remark 3.4. For a relevant hermitian space \tilde{V} in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$, the set of complex points $\mathcal{M}^{\tilde{V}}(\mathbb{C})$ of the summand $\mathcal{M}^{\tilde{V}}$ of \mathcal{M} , in the sense of the decomposition in Proposition 2.13, corresponds to the subset of the product $\mathcal{M}(n-r,r)(\mathbb{C}) \times \mathcal{M}_0(\mathbb{C})$ indexed by pairs (V^\sharp, V_0) for which $\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V) \simeq \tilde{V}$.

3.3. Next we consider the complex points of the special cycles. Suppose that $(A, \iota, \lambda, E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x})$ is a point of $\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C})$, and let $H = H_1(A(\mathbb{C}), \mathbb{Z})$ and $H_0 = H_1(E(\mathbb{C}), \mathbb{Z})$. There are isomorphisms $j : H \xrightarrow{\sim} L$ and $j_0 : H_0 \xrightarrow{\sim} L_0$, for relevant hermitian lattices L and L_0 in our fixed sets of representatives, and we obtain data $z \in D(L)$ and, setting $\tilde{L} := \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(L_0, L)$,

$$\tilde{\mathbf{x}} = j \circ \mathbf{x} \circ j_0^{-1} \in \tilde{L}^m.$$

Here we slightly abuse notation and write \mathbf{x} for the collection of homomorphisms from H_0 to H induced by \mathbf{x} . Note that the lattice \tilde{L} has a hermitian form \tilde{h} coming from the hermitian forms h_λ and h_{λ_0} on H and H_0 arising from the polarizations, as above. The pair $(z, \tilde{\mathbf{x}})$ satisfies the following incidence relations

- (1) $\tilde{h}(\tilde{\mathbf{x}}, \tilde{\mathbf{x}}) = T$.
- (2) $z \in D(L)_{\tilde{\mathbf{x}}}$, where, for $\tilde{\mathbf{x}} = [\tilde{x}_1, \dots, \tilde{x}_m]$,
$$D(L)_{\tilde{\mathbf{x}}} = \{ z \in D(L) \mid z \perp \tilde{x}_i(L_0) \text{ for all } i \}.$$

Note that condition (2) corresponds to the fact that the \mathbf{k} -linear maps $x_i : H_{0,\mathbb{R}} = \mathrm{Lie} E \rightarrow H_{\mathbb{R}} = \mathrm{Lie} A$ are holomorphic.

Let

$$\mathrm{Inc}_\infty(T; L, L_0) \subset D(L) \times \tilde{L}^m$$

be the set of pairs satisfying conditions (1) and (2). The complex uniformization of the special cycles is now given by the following proposition.

Proposition 3.5. *Let $T \in \mathrm{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})$. Then there is an isomorphism of orbifolds*

$$\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C}) \simeq \coprod_{[L] \in \mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}} \coprod_{[L_0] \in \mathcal{L}_{(1,0)}} \left[(O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times \times \Gamma_L) \backslash \mathrm{Inc}_\infty(T; L, L_0) \right].$$

Here $O_{\mathbf{k}}^\times$ acts by scalar multiplication on the $\tilde{\mathbf{x}}$ -component of an element of $\mathrm{Inc}_\infty(T; L, L_0)$.

This can be written more explicitly. For a fractional ideal \mathfrak{a} and a lattice L in $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$, let $L_{\mathfrak{a}} = \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} L$, with hermitian form

$$(3.3) \quad (x, x)_{\mathfrak{a}} = \frac{(x, x)}{N(\mathfrak{a})}.$$

Then, $L_{\mathfrak{a}}$ is again a self-dual lattice,

$$(3.4) \quad L_{\mathfrak{a}} \simeq \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(L_{0,\mathfrak{a}^{-1}}, L)$$

as hermitian lattices, and we have

$$(3.5) \quad \mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C}) \simeq \coprod_{[\mathfrak{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} \coprod_{[L] \in \mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}} \left[(O_{\mathbf{k}}^{\times} \times \Gamma_L) \backslash \coprod_{\substack{\mathbf{x} \in L_{\mathfrak{a}}^m \\ (\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})_{\mathfrak{a}} = T}} D(L)_{\mathbf{x}} \right].$$

If $\tilde{\mathbf{x}} \in (\tilde{L} \otimes \mathbb{R})^m$ with $\tilde{h}(\tilde{\mathbf{x}}, \tilde{\mathbf{x}}) = T > 0$, then $m \leq n - r$ and $D(L)_{\tilde{\mathbf{x}}}$ has codimension mr in $D(L)$.

Corollary 3.6. *For $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$, and $m \leq n - r$, the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C})$ has codimension mr . If $m > n - r$, then $\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C})$ is empty.*

Remark 3.7. The cycles occurring here are essentially those studied in the joint work of the first author with John Millson. More precisely, let $\text{pr} : D(L) \rightarrow \Gamma_L \backslash D(L)$ be the projection. Then the cycles

$$Z(T; L_{\mathfrak{a}}, \Gamma_L) = \coprod_{\substack{\mathbf{x} \in L_{\mathfrak{a}}^m \\ (\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})_{\mathfrak{a}} = T \\ \text{mod } \Gamma_L}} \text{pr}(D(L)_{\mathbf{x}})$$

of codimension mr in $\Gamma_L \backslash D(L)$ are those introduced in [42], [43], [44], and, in the case of signature $(2, 1)$, in [37].

There is an alternative version, where, with the notation as above, we fix isomorphisms $j_{\mathbb{Q}} : H_{\mathbb{Q}} \xrightarrow{\sim} V$ and $j_{0,\mathbb{Q}} : H_{0,\mathbb{Q}} \xrightarrow{\sim} V_0$. The lattice $j_{\mathbb{Q}}(H)$ determines a G_1^V -genus $[[L]]$ in V , i.e, an element V^{\sharp} in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}$. The lattices $j_{\mathbb{Q}}(H)$ and $j_{0,\mathbb{Q}}(H_0)$ correspond to cosets $gK_1^{V^{\sharp}}$ in $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ and $g_0K_1^{V_0}$ in $G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f)$, respectively, and so, we obtain a collection

$$(z, gK_1^{V^{\sharp}}, g_0K_1^{V_0}, \tilde{\mathbf{x}}) \in D(V) \times G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)/K_1^{V^{\sharp}} \times G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f)/K_1^{V_0} \times \tilde{V}(\mathbb{Q})^m,$$

where

$$\tilde{V} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V), \quad \tilde{\mathbf{x}} = j \circ \mathbf{x} \circ j_0^{-1}.$$

The data $(z, gK_1^{V^{\sharp}}, g_0K_1^{V_0}, \tilde{\mathbf{x}})$ satisfies the following incidence relations.

- (0) $\tilde{\mathbf{x}} \in (g(\tilde{L} \otimes \hat{\mathbb{Z}})g_0^{-1})^m$, where $\tilde{L} = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(L_0, L)$.
- (1) $(\tilde{\mathbf{x}}, \tilde{\mathbf{x}}) = T$.

(2) $z \in D(V)_{\tilde{\mathbf{x}}}$, where

$$D(V)_{\tilde{\mathbf{x}}} = \{ z \in D(V) \mid z \perp \tilde{x}_i(V_0) \text{ for all } i \}.$$

For given relevant spaces $V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ and $V_0 \in \mathcal{R}_{(1,0)}(\mathbf{k})$, let

$$\text{Inc}_\infty(T; V^\sharp, V_0) \subset D(V) \times G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)/K_1^{V^\sharp} \times G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f)/K_1^{V_0} \times \tilde{V}(\mathbb{Q})^m,$$

be the subset of collections satisfying conditions (0), (1) and (2).

Proposition 3.8. *Let $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})$. Then there is an isomorphism of orbifolds*

$$\mathcal{Z}(T)(\mathbb{C}) \simeq \coprod_{V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}^\sharp} \coprod_{V_0 \in \mathcal{R}_{(1,0)}} [(G_1^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash \text{Inc}_\infty(T; V^\sharp, V_0)].$$

□

4. RELATION TO SHIMURA VARIETIES

In this section, we discuss the relation between our moduli space $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and Shimura varieties for unitary similitude groups. When $n > 1$, we assume that $r(n-r) > 0$, and we fix an embedding τ of \mathbf{k} into \mathbb{C} .

4.1. We fix a hermitian vector space V over \mathbf{k} of signature $(n-r, r)$ and write $G = G^V = \text{GU}(V)$. For an open compact subgroup $K \subset G(\mathbb{A}_f)$, there is a Shimura variety Sh_K^V over¹ \mathbf{k} with

$$(4.1) \quad \text{Sh}_K^V(\mathbb{C}) \simeq G(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash (D \times G(\mathbb{A}_f)/K).$$

Remark 4.1. We note that two hermitian spaces $V, (\ , \)$ and $V', (\ , \)'$ which are strictly similar, i.e., $V \simeq V'$ with $(\ , \)' = c(\ , \)$ for $c \in \mathbb{Q}_+^\times$, define the same Shimura varieties.

4.2. These Shimura varieties are related to the moduli stacks of an ‘up-to-isogeny’ moduli problem [15, 36]. For a hermitian space V over \mathbf{k} with signature $(n-r, r)$ and a compact open subgroup K in $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$, we define a groupoid $\underline{\text{Sh}}_K^V$ fibered over the category of locally noetherian \mathbf{k} -schemes. For a locally noetherian \mathbf{k} -scheme S , the objects of $\underline{\text{Sh}}_K^V(S)$ are collections $(A, \iota, \lambda, \bar{\eta})$, where

- (1) A is an abelian scheme over S , up to isogeny, with an action of \mathbf{k} ,
 $\iota : \mathbf{k} \rightarrow \text{End}^0(A),$

¹In the case where n is even and $r = n - r$, the reflex field is \mathbb{Q} , and we take Sh_K^V to be the base change to \mathbf{k} of the usual canonical model.

- (2) λ is a principal polarization²,
- (3) $\bar{\eta}$ is a K -level structure, i.e., a K -orbit of $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$ -linear isomorphisms

$$\eta : T(A)^0 \rightarrow V(\mathbb{A}_f)$$

such that the polarization form on $T(A)^0$ and the symplectic form \langle, \rangle on $V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ coincide up to a scalar in \mathbb{A}_f^\times .

In addition, the action ι is supposed to be compatible with the polarization, i.e., for $a \in \mathbf{k}$, $\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma)$, where $*$ is the Rosati involution on $\text{End}^0(A)$ determined by λ . Finally, the action of \mathbf{k} is supposed to satisfy the determinant condition of type $(n-r, r)$ (Kottwitz condition):

$$(4.2) \quad \det(T - \iota(a) \mid \text{Lie}(A)) = (T - \varphi(a))^{n-r} (T - \varphi(a^\sigma))^r \in \mathcal{O}_S[T],$$

where $\varphi : \mathbf{k} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_S$ is the structure homomorphism.

The morphisms between two objects $(A, \iota, \lambda, \bar{\eta})$ and $(A', \iota', \lambda', \bar{\eta}')$ in $\text{Sh}_K^V(S)$ are given by \mathbf{k} -linear isogenies $\mu : A \rightarrow A'$ carrying $\bar{\eta}$ to $\bar{\eta}'$ and carrying λ to a \mathbb{Q}_+^\times -multiple of λ' . All such morphisms are isomorphisms.

Remark 4.2. Let us be more precise about (3). For this we recall the discussion on p.390-91 of [36]. Suppose that (A, ι, λ) is an abelian scheme over a connected base S , up to isogeny, together with a polarization λ and a compatible \mathbf{k} -action. The rational Tate module of A is then a smooth \mathbb{A}_f -sheaf on S . For a fixed geometric point s of S , the rational Tate module of A is determined by the rational Tate module $H_1(A_s, \mathbb{A}_f)$ viewed as a $\pi_1(S, s)$ -module. The polarization induces an alternating form on $H_1(A_s, \mathbb{A}_f)$ valued in $\mathbb{A}_f(1) = \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}(1) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q}$, where

$$(4.3) \quad \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}(1) = \varprojlim_n \mu_n(k(s)),$$

for $k(s)$ the residue field of s . If we fix an isomorphism

$$(4.4) \quad \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}(1) \xrightarrow{\sim} \widehat{\mathbb{Z}},$$

we obtain an \mathbb{A}_f -valued alternating form on $H_1(A_s, \mathbb{A}_f)$ and a corresponding $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$ -valued hermitian form, since the polarization is compatible with the \mathbf{k} -action. A change in the isomorphism (4.4) results in a scaling of these forms by an element of $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$. A K -level structure is a K -orbit $\bar{\eta}$ in the set of $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$ -linear isomorphisms

$$\eta : H_1(A_s, \mathbb{A}_f) \xrightarrow{\sim} V(\mathbb{A}_f)$$

² By this we mean that λ is an isomorphism in the isogeny category, and that for some $a \in \mathbb{Q}_+^\times$, $a\lambda$ is a polarization in the sense of Deligne, [15], p.145. Specifically, for an abelian variety A up to isogeny over a field k , a polarization is an element of $\text{NS}(A) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ such that a positive multiple is defined by a projective embedding. Note that $\text{NS}(A) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ can be identified with the symmetric elements in $\text{Hom}(A, A^\vee) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$. This identification is being made here.

which preserve the hermitian forms up to a scalar in \mathbb{A}_f^\times . Finally, the group $\pi_1(S, s)$ acts on $H_1(A_s, \mathbb{A}_f)$ by similitudes of the alternating form, and it is required that the orbit $\bar{\eta}$ be fixed by this action. As a result, the notion of K -level structure is independent of the choice of the geometric point s and of the trivialization (4.4).

A ‘ p -integral version’ of the following proposition is proved in [36], and the proof transposes easily to the situation considered here, comp. also [15].

Proposition 4.3. *$\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V$ is a smooth Deligne-Mumford stack over $\mathrm{Spec} \, \mathbf{k}$. For K sufficiently small, $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V$ is a quasi-projective scheme over \mathbf{k} , naturally isomorphic to the canonical model of the Shimura variety Sh_K^V . In particular, if K is sufficiently small, the set of \mathbb{C} -points $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V(\mathbb{C})$ of $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V$, via the fixed embedding τ of \mathbf{k} into \mathbb{C} , is canonically identified with the double coset space $\mathrm{Sh}_K^V(\mathbb{C})$ of (4.1). When K is not sufficiently small, then $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V(\mathbb{C})$ is canonically identified with the space*

$$[G(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash D(V) \times G(\mathbb{A}_f) / K]$$

viewed as an orbifold.

4.3. The relation between the Shimura variety $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_K^V$ and our moduli stack $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ is now given by the following result.

Proposition 4.4. *Let $V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ be a relevant hermitian space. Then there is an isomorphism of stacks over \mathbf{k} ,*

$$\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp} \times_{\mathrm{Spec} \, \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathrm{Spec} \, \mathbf{k} \simeq \underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_{K^\sharp}^V,$$

where $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}$ is the component of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ associated to the strict similarity class of V^\sharp in (i) of Proposition 2.20 and K^\sharp is the stabilizer in $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ of a self-dual lattice in the G_1^V -genus given by V^\sharp .

Remark 4.5. Note the stacks on both sides of this isomorphism depend only on the strict similitude class of V and recall that, when n is odd, there is only one such class.

Proof. For a connected locally noetherian scheme S over \mathbf{k} , let $\xi = (A, \iota, \lambda)$ be an object of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}(S)$. We view A as an abelian scheme up to isogeny with polarization given by λ and we extend ι to an action of \mathbf{k} . In order to complete the definition of the corresponding object of $\underline{\mathrm{Sh}}_{K^\sharp}^V(S)$, we need to define the level structure $\bar{\eta}$. Since ξ lies in $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}(S)$, and after choosing a trivialization (4.4) of the roots of unity, we have an $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$ -linear similitude

$$j_{\mathbb{A}_f} : T(A)^0 \xrightarrow{\sim} V(\mathbb{A}_f),$$

unique up to an element of $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)^0$. The image $j_{\mathbb{A}_f}(T(A))$ is a self-dual lattice in V in the genus $[[L]]$ given by V^\sharp , and so, adjusting by an element of $G(\mathbb{A}_f)^0$ if necessary, we can assume that $j_{\mathbb{A}_f}(T(A)) = L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$. Let $\eta = j_{\mathbb{A}_f}$; the K^\sharp -orbit $\bar{\eta}$ of η is then uniquely determined, and the collection $(A, \iota, \lambda, \bar{\eta})$ is an object in $\underline{\text{Sh}}_{K^\sharp}^V(S)$.

Conversely, if an object $(B, \iota, \lambda, \bar{\eta})$ of $\underline{\text{Sh}}_{K^\sharp}^V(S)$ is given, the $O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ -lattice

$$(\eta)^{-1}(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}) \subset T(B)^0$$

is independent of the choice of η in the K^\sharp -orbit. There is a unique abelian scheme A over S , equipped with a quasi-isogeny with B , such that

$$T(A) = (\eta)^{-1}(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}).$$

Moreover, there is a unique $a \in \mathbb{Q}_+^\times$ such that $a\lambda$ is a principal polarization of A . To see this, note that, under η , the $O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$ -valued hermitian forms on $T(B)$ and $V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ coincide up to a scalar in $(\mathbb{A}_f)^\times$. Of course, this scalar is only well defined up to an element of $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$. In any case, by passing to $a\lambda$, we can arrange it so that this scalar lies in $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$ and hence $a\lambda$ defines a principal polarization of A , since $T(A)$ corresponds to $L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ and hence is now self-dual. The given action of \mathbf{k} on B defines an action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on A , since $T(A)$ is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice. The Kottwitz condition on $(B, \iota, \lambda, \bar{\eta})$ implies the signature condition on (A, ι, λ) . Furthermore, by construction $T(A)^0$ is similar to $V \otimes \mathbb{A}_f$, so that $V(\xi)$ is strictly similar to V , again by the signature condition. Thus, we obtain a collection $(A, \iota, a\lambda)$ of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}(S)$. \square

4.4. In this section, we review the action of the Galois group $\text{Gal}(\bar{\mathbb{Q}}/\mathbf{k})$ on the connected components of Sh_K^V and of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$. Here we will work with the canonical model over the reflex field E , where $E = \mathbb{Q}$, if $r = n-r$, and $E = \mathbf{k}$ otherwise.

Let T be the torus over \mathbb{Q} given by

$$T = \begin{cases} T^1 \times \mathbb{G}_m & \text{if } n \text{ is even,} \\ \text{Res}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbb{G}_{m, \mathbf{k}}) & \text{if } n \text{ is odd,} \end{cases}$$

where $T^1 = \ker(N : \text{Res}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbb{G}_{m, \mathbf{k}}) \rightarrow \mathbb{G}_m)$. For a fixed hermitian space V of signature $(n-r, r)$ with $G = G^V = \text{GU}(V)$, we define a surjective homomorphism $\nu^o : G \rightarrow T$ by

$$\nu^o(g) = \begin{cases} \left(\frac{\det(g)}{\nu(g)^k}, \nu(g) \right) & \text{if } n = 2k \text{ is even,} \\ \frac{\det(g)}{\nu(g)^k} & \text{if } n = 2k+1 \text{ is odd.} \end{cases}$$

Note that, in the odd case $N(\nu^o(g)) = \nu(g)$. In particular, $\ker(\nu^o) = \mathrm{SU}(V)$ in both cases. Then we have

$$(4.5) \quad \pi_0(\mathrm{Sh}_K^V) \simeq T(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash T(\mathbb{A}) / \nu^o(K_\infty \times K) = T(\mathbb{Q})^0 \backslash T(\mathbb{A}_f) / \nu^o(K),$$

where $T(\mathbb{Q})^0 = T(\mathbb{Q}) \cap T(\mathbb{R})^0 T(\mathbb{A}_f)$ and K_∞ is the centralizer of \mathfrak{h} in $G(\mathbb{R})$. Note that $\nu^o(K_\infty) = T(\mathbb{R})^0$, the identity component of $T(\mathbb{R})$.

Next, we recall the standard description of the action of the Galois group on this set, cf. [63], for example. For any $\mathfrak{h} : \mathbb{S} \rightarrow G(\mathbb{R})$, a simple calculation shows that

$$\nu^o \circ \mathfrak{h}(z) = \begin{cases} ((\frac{z}{\bar{z}})^{k-r}, z\bar{z}) & \text{if } n = 2k \text{ is even,} \\ (\frac{z}{\bar{z}})^{k-r} z & \text{if } n = 2k + 1 \text{ is odd.} \end{cases}$$

Moreover, writing $\mathbb{S} = \mathbb{S}_{\mathbb{Q}} \times_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}$ where $\mathbb{S}_{\mathbb{Q}} = \mathrm{R}_{E/\mathbb{Q}}(\mathbb{G}_{m,E})$, there is a homomorphism of the form (cf. [63], 1.c),

$$\rho = N_{E/\mathbb{Q}} \circ \nu^o \circ \mu_h : \mathbb{S}_{\mathbb{Q}} \longrightarrow T,$$

given by³

$$\rho(a) = \begin{cases} ((\frac{a}{\bar{a}})^{k-r}, a\bar{a}) & \text{if } n = 2k \text{ is even and } r \neq n - r, \\ (1, a) & \text{if } n = 2k \text{ is even and } r = n - r, \\ (\frac{a}{\bar{a}})^{k-r} a & \text{if } n = 2k + 1 \text{ is odd.} \end{cases}$$

Finally, the action of $\sigma \in \mathrm{Gal}(\bar{\mathbb{Q}}/E)$ on $\pi_0(\mathrm{Sh}_K^V)$ is given, on the right side of (4.5), by multiplication by $\rho(x_\sigma)$, where $x_\sigma \in \mathbb{A}_E^\times$ is an element whose image under the Artin reciprocity map is $\sigma|E^{\mathrm{ab}}$. As in [63], we normalize this map so that a local uniformizer corresponds to the inverse of the Frobenius.

In passing, we record the following information about the components of our moduli spaces.

Proposition 4.6. *Assume that $r(n - r) > 0$, and let*

$$\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)_{\mathbf{k}} = \mathcal{M}(n - r, r) \times_{\mathrm{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathrm{Spec} \mathbf{k}.$$

(i) *Suppose that n is odd. Then, $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)_{\mathbf{k}}$ is the disjoint union of $h_{\mathbf{k}}$ geometrically irreducible components, and these components remain disjoint over $\mathrm{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}[(2\Delta)^{-1}]$.*

(ii) *Suppose that n is even. For $V^\sharp \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$, let $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)_{\mathbf{k}}^{V^\sharp}$ be the open substack defined after base change to $\mathrm{Spec} \mathbf{k}$ by (i) of Proposition 2.20. Then $\mathcal{M}(n - r, r)_{\mathbf{k}}^{V^\sharp}$ is the disjoint union of $2^{1-\delta} h_{\mathbf{k}}$ geometrically irreducible components, except in the following case: $\mathrm{ord}_2(\Delta) = 2$, $L \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Z}_2 \simeq H(0)^{n/2}$. In this case, the number of components is $2^{2-\delta} h_{\mathbf{k}}$, for $\mathbf{k} \neq \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$ and 1 for $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$. Again, these components remain disjoint over $\mathrm{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}[(2\Delta)^{-1}]$.*

³ In [63], eq. (1.15), the exponent -1 in the first factor should be eliminated.

We omit the proof, and only give the following explanation. For $V^\sharp = (V, [[L]])$, let $K = K_L$ be the stablizer of L in $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$. Then, to determine the number of components $|\pi_0(\text{Sh}_K^V)|$, we must determine the image $\nu^o(K)$ in $T(\mathbb{A}_f)$. For n odd, we have $\nu^o(K) = \widehat{O}_k^\times$. For n is even, and if we are not in the exceptional case,

$$\nu^o(K) = \widehat{O}_k^1 \times \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times.$$

In the exceptional case,

$$\nu^o(K) = \widehat{O}_k^{1*} \times \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$$

where

$$\widehat{O}_k^{1*} = O_{k,2}^{1*} \times \prod_{p \neq 2} O_{k,p}^1,$$

with

$$O_{k,2}^{1*} = \{ a\bar{a}^{-1} \mid a \in O_{k,2}^\times \}.$$

Note that $|\widehat{O}_k^1 : \widehat{O}_k^{1*}| = 2$ and that $-1 \in \widehat{O}_k^{1*}$. Finally, for $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$, $i \notin \widehat{O}_k^{1*}$.

Part II: The supersingular locus

5. UNIFORMIZATION OF THE SUPERSINGULAR LOCUS

Let p be a prime inert in k . In this section we review the p -adic uniformization of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ along the supersingular locus of its reduction, following the procedure of Chapter 6 of [67].

Let $\mathbb{F} = \bar{\mathbb{F}}_p$ and let $W = W(\mathbb{F})$ with a fixed embedding τ of k_p .

As in [77] and [48], we fix a supersingular p -divisible formal group \mathbb{X} over \mathbb{F} of dimension n and height $2n$ with an action ι of O_k satisfying the determinant condition of type $(n-r, r)$ and a p -principal polarization $\lambda_{\mathbb{X}}$ for which the Rosati involution $*$ satisfies $\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma)$. The collection $(\mathbb{X}, \iota, \lambda_{\mathbb{X}})$ is unique up to isomorphism.

Let $\mathcal{N} = \mathcal{N}(n-r, r)$ be the functor on $\text{Nilp} = \text{Nilp}_W$ whose value on $S \in \text{Nilp}$ is the set of isomorphism classes of collections $\xi = (X, \iota, \lambda_X, \rho_X)$ where X is a p -divisible group over S with an O_k -action satisfying the determinant condition of type $(n-r, r)$ and λ_X is a p -principal polarization compatible with the O_k -action. Finally,

$$\rho_X : X \times_W \mathbb{F} \longrightarrow \mathbb{X} \times_{\mathbb{F}} \bar{S}$$

is an O_k -equivariant quasi-isogeny of height 0 such that $\rho_X^\vee \circ \lambda_{\mathbb{X}} \circ \rho_X$ is a \mathbb{Z}_p^\times -multiple of λ_X in $\text{Hom}_{O_k}(X, X^\vee) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$. Here $\bar{S} = S \times_{\mathbb{F}} W$. An isomorphism

between two collections $\xi = (X, \iota, \lambda_X, \rho_X)$ and $\xi' = (X', \iota', \lambda_{X'}, \rho_{X'})$ is an O_k -linear isomorphism $\alpha : X \rightarrow X'$, compatible with ρ_X and $\rho_{X'}$ over \bar{S} , such that $\alpha^*(\lambda_{X'}) \in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times \lambda_X$.

In fact, for our global construction, it will be convenient to choose $(\mathbb{X}, \iota, \lambda_{\mathbb{X}})$ as follows. We fix a base point $\xi^o = (A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o)$ of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(\mathbb{F})$ in the supersingular locus, and let $(\mathbb{X}, \iota, \lambda_{\mathbb{X}}) = (X(A^o), \iota^o, \lambda_{X(A^o)})$ be the corresponding p -divisible group with its additional structure.

We also fix a trivialization of the prime-to- p roots of unity over \mathbb{F} ,

$$(5.1) \quad \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p(1) \simeq \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p.$$

Then the Weil pairing on $T^p(A^o)^0$ takes values in $\mathbb{A}_f^p(1) \simeq \mathbb{A}_f^p$, and there is a unique relevant space $V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ such that $T^p(A^o)^0$ is isometric to $V \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$. If $p \neq 2$, there is a unique $V^\sharp = (V, [[L]]) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ such that $T^p(A^o)^0$ is isometric to $V \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$, and the Tate module $T_2(A^o)$ determines the type of the genus $[[L]]$ of self-dual lattices, cf. the proof of Proposition 2.20.

For the rest of this section, we will discuss only the case $p \neq 2$ and leave it to the reader to make the slight modifications needed in the $p = 2$ case.

Remark 5.1. We can choose a base point $\xi^o = (A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o)$ giving rise to each V^\sharp in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp$ for which $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp}(\mathbb{F})$ is non-empty.

We fix a self-dual lattice $L \in V$ in the given G_1^V -genus and an isomorphism

$$(5.2) \quad \eta^o : T^p(A^o)^0 \xrightarrow{\sim} V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$$

such that (i) η^o is an isometry and (ii) $\eta^o(T^p(A^o)) = L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$. Let K^p be the stabilizer of L in $G(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$, and note that K^p is a subgroup of

$$G(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 = \{ g \in G(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \mid \nu(g) \in (\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p)^\times \}.$$

We choose a lift $\widetilde{\mathbb{X}}$ of \mathbb{X} to W and let \widetilde{A}^o be the corresponding lift of A^o . There is then an isomorphism

$$(5.3) \quad \widetilde{\eta}^o : T^p(\widetilde{A}^o)^0 \longrightarrow T^p(A^o)^0 \xrightarrow{\eta^o} V(\mathbb{A}_f^p).$$

Using these objects, we can define a morphism of functors on Nilp_W

$$(5.4) \quad \Theta : \mathcal{N} \times G(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$$

as follows. For $S \in \text{Nilp}_W$, let $\widetilde{A}_S^o = \widetilde{A}^o \times_W S$. Note that, over the special fiber $\bar{S} = S \times_W \mathbb{F}$, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$\widetilde{A}_S^o \times_W \mathbb{F} = A^o \times_{\mathbb{F}} \bar{S}.$$

Thus there is an O_k -action

$$\iota_S^o = \iota^o : O_k \longrightarrow \text{End}_{\bar{S}}(A^o \times \bar{S}) = \text{End}(A^o),$$

and a polarization

$$\lambda_{\bar{S}}^o = \lambda^o \times 1_{\bar{S}} : A^o \times \bar{S} \longrightarrow A^{o\vee} \times \bar{S}.$$

By ‘rigidity’, there are unique extensions of these to \tilde{A}_S^o , i.e., there is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action by quasi-isogenies,

$$\tilde{\iota}_S^o : O_{\mathbf{k}} \longrightarrow \text{End}_S^0(\tilde{A}_S^o) = \text{End}^0(A^o),$$

and a (quasi-) polarization

$$\tilde{\lambda}_S^o : \tilde{A}_S^o \longrightarrow (\tilde{A}_S^o)^\vee.$$

Finally, there is an isomorphism

$$\tilde{\eta}_S^o : T^p(\tilde{A}_S^o)^0 \longrightarrow T^p(A^o)^0 \xrightarrow{\eta^o} V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$$

derived from (5.3). Note that $(\tilde{A}_S^o, \tilde{\iota}_S^o, \tilde{\lambda}_S^o)$ need not be an element of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$, since $\tilde{\iota}_S^o$ (resp. $\tilde{\lambda}_S^o$) is only a quasi-action (resp. quasi-polarization).

Remark 5.2. The choice of trivialization (5.1) of the prime-to- p roots of unity over \mathbb{F} made above gives a canonical choice of such a trivialization at all geometric points of any scheme $S \in \text{Nilp}_W$. The isomorphism $\tilde{\eta}_S^o$ is always an isometry for this choice.

Note that the restriction to \bar{S} of the p -divisible group of $(\tilde{A}_S^o, \tilde{\iota}_S^o, \tilde{\lambda}_S^o)$ is canonically identified with $(\mathbb{X}_{\bar{S}}, \iota, \lambda_{\mathbb{X}, \bar{S}})$. Also note that all of these constructions are functorial in S .

Proposition 5.3. *For a given $S \in \text{Nilp}_W$, let $(\tilde{A}_S^o, \tilde{\iota}_S^o, \tilde{\lambda}_S^o, \tilde{\eta}_S^o)$ be the collection of objects just defined.*

For each object $\xi = (X, \iota, \lambda_X, \rho_X)$ in $\mathcal{N}(S)$ and coset $gK^p \in G(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0/K^p$, there is an object $\Theta(\xi, gK^p) = (A, \iota, \lambda)$ of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$ and a $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear quasi-isogeny $\phi : A \rightarrow \tilde{A}_S^o$ uniquely characterized by the following properties:

- (i) *The polarization λ agrees with $\phi^\vee \circ \tilde{\lambda}_S^o \circ \phi$.*
- (ii) *Let*

$$\eta = \tilde{\eta}_S^o \circ \phi_* : T^p(A)^0 \longrightarrow V(\mathbb{A}_f^p).$$

The map η is a symplectic isomorphism, by Remark 5.2.

Then

$$\eta(T^p(A)) = g \cdot (L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p).$$

- (iii) *Let $(X(A), \iota)$ be the p -divisible group of (A, ι) with $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action. Then there is an isomorphism*

$$i : (X(A), \iota) \xrightarrow{\sim} (X, \iota)$$

such that the quasi-isogeny ϕ induces ρ_X over \bar{S} , i.e., the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} (X(A), \iota) \times_W \mathbb{F} & \xrightarrow{\sim} & (X, \iota) \times_W \mathbb{F} \\ \phi_* \searrow & & \downarrow \rho_X \\ & & (\mathbb{X}_{\bar{S}}, \iota) \end{array}$$

commutes. The maps $\lambda_{X(A)}$ and $i^*(\lambda_X)$ agree up to a factor in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times .

The construction of A, ϕ is functorial in S in the obvious sense.

Proof. A detailed proof can be found in [67], §6. The point is that we have the lattice

$$(\tilde{\eta}_S^o)^{-1}(gL \otimes \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^p) \subset T^p(\tilde{A}_S^o)^0,$$

while ρ_X determines a p -divisible group in the isogeny class of $X(\tilde{A}_S^o)$, the p -divisible group of \tilde{A}_S^o . Together these two determine a unique abelian scheme A over S with a quasi-isogeny to \tilde{A}_S^o . The quasi-polarization and quasi- O_k -action on \tilde{A}_S^o determine a principal polarization and O_k -action on A , as required. \square

Let $I(\mathbb{Q}) = I^V(\mathbb{Q})$ be the group of quasi-isogenies in $\text{End}_{O_k}^0(A^o)$ that preserve the polarization λ^o . Note that $I(\mathbb{Q})$ is the group of \mathbb{Q} -points of an algebraic group defined over \mathbb{Q} . Any $\gamma \in I(\mathbb{Q})$ induces a quasi-isogeny $\alpha_p(\gamma)$ of height 0 of the p -divisible group $(\mathbb{X}, \iota, \lambda_{\mathbb{X}})$ of (A^o, ι, λ^o) and hence acts on \mathcal{N} by sending $\xi = (X, \iota, \lambda_X, \rho_X)$ to $\alpha_p(\gamma)\xi = (X, \iota, \lambda_X, \alpha_p(\gamma) \circ \rho_X)$. The element γ also induces an automorphism γ_* of $T^p(A^o)^0$ and hence defines an element

$$\alpha^p(\gamma) = \eta^{p,o} \circ \gamma_* \circ (\eta^{p,o})^{-1} \in G(\mathbb{A}_f^p),$$

of scale factor 1.

Lemma 5.4. *Any $\gamma \in I(\mathbb{Q})$ induces an isomorphism*

$$\Theta(\alpha_p(\gamma)\xi, \alpha^p(\gamma)gK^p) \simeq \Theta(\xi, gK^p),$$

as points in $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)(S)$. Conversely, any isomorphism

$$\Theta(\xi, gK^p) \simeq \Theta(\xi', g'K^p)$$

is induced by a unique $\gamma \in I(\mathbb{Q})$.

Proof. The quasi-isogeny $\gamma : A^o \rightarrow A^o$ lifts uniquely to a quasi-isogeny $\tilde{\gamma}_S : \tilde{A}_S^o \rightarrow \tilde{A}_S^o$ which commutes with the O_k -action and preserves the polarization $\tilde{\lambda}_S^o$. Moreover, the diagram

$$(5.5) \quad \begin{array}{ccccc} \tilde{\eta}_S^{p,o} : T^p(\tilde{A}_S^o) & \longrightarrow & T^p(A^o) & \xrightarrow{\eta^{p,o}} & V(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \\ (\tilde{\gamma}_S)_* \downarrow & & \gamma_* \downarrow & & \alpha^p(\gamma) \downarrow \\ \tilde{\eta}_S^{p,o} : T^p(\tilde{A}_S^o) & \longrightarrow & T^p(A^o) & \xrightarrow{\eta^{p,o}} & V(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \end{array}$$

commutes. Suppose that $\Theta(\xi, gK^p) = (A, \iota, \lambda)$ with quasi-isogeny $\phi : A \rightarrow \tilde{A}_S^o$. Then the same collection (A, ι, λ) with quasi-isogeny $\tilde{\gamma}_S \circ \phi$ satisfies the conditions of Proposition 5.3 for the pair $(\xi', g'K^p) = (\alpha_p(\gamma)\xi, \alpha^p(\gamma)gK^p)$. Hence γ induces an isomorphism $\Theta(\xi, gK^p) \simeq \Theta(\xi', g'K^p)$. Conversely, an isomorphism $\beta : \Theta(\xi, gK^p) \simeq \Theta(\xi', g'K^p)$ defines a quasi-isogeny $\phi^{-1} \circ \beta \circ \phi' : \tilde{A}_S^o \rightarrow \tilde{A}_S^o$. This then defines an element $\gamma \in I(\mathbb{Q})$ which induces the isomorphism β . \square

In the present situation, the uniformization theorem, Theorem 6.30 of [67], amounts to the following. It reflects the process of forgetting the quasi-isogeny ϕ in the construction of Proposition 5.3. Recall that we fixed a trivialization (5.1) of the prime-to- p roots of unity over \mathbb{F} .

Theorem 5.5. *Let $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}(n-r, r)^{\text{ss}}$ denote the formal completion of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } W(\mathbb{F})$ along its supersingular locus. For a relevant space $V^{\sharp} = (V, [[L]])$ in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}$, let $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}(n-r, r)^{V^{\sharp}, \text{ss}}$ be the open and closed sublocus where the rational Tate module $T^p(A)^0$ is isomorphic to $V \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p$ and the type of the hermitian lattice $T_2(A)$ coincides with the type of the G_1^V -genus $[[L]]$. Then the map Θ induces an isomorphism*

$$\Theta : [I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash (\mathcal{N} \times G^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K^p)] \xrightarrow{\sim} \widehat{\mathcal{M}}(n-r, r)^{V^{\sharp}, \text{ss}}$$

of formal algebraic stacks over W , where K^p is the stabilizer of L in $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$. \square

Note that our space \mathcal{N} is (a slight variant of) the space $\check{\mathcal{M}}$ in [67] and that Theorem 6.30 of loc. cit. actually gives a stronger result, not needed here, involving the descent of both sides to $\text{Spf}(O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p)$.

Remark 5.6. Recall from Proposition 2.20 the disjoint decomposition of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)[\frac{1}{2}]$ according to strict similarity classes of relevant hermitian spaces in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}$. Then, it is clear that by taking the disjoint sum of the spaces $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}(n-r, r)^{V^{\sharp}, \text{ss}}$, as V runs through the elements in the fixed strict similarity class $[V]$, we obtain the formal completion of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{[V]^{\sharp}} \times \text{Spec } W(\mathbb{F})$ along its supersingular locus.

A special case of the previous result occurs for \mathcal{M}_0 . In this case the formal scheme $\mathcal{N}_0 = \mathcal{N}(1, 0)$ is trivial, i.e., is equal to $\text{Spf } W$ (*canonical lifting*).

Let us now combine the uniformization theorems for $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ and for \mathcal{M}_0 to obtain a uniformization theorem for $\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathcal{M}_0$. Recall the disjoint sum decomposition of $\mathcal{M}[\frac{1}{2}]$ according to relevant spaces $\tilde{V}^{\sharp} \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}$, cf. Proposition 2.20. We denote by $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{\tilde{V}^{\sharp}, \text{ss}}$ the formal

completion of $\mathcal{M}^{\tilde{V}^\sharp}$ along its supersingular locus. Now there is a decomposition

$$(5.6) \quad \widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{\tilde{V}^\sharp, \text{ss}} = \coprod_{(V^\sharp, V_0)} \widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}},$$

where

$$(5.7) \quad \widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}} = \widehat{\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)}^{V^\sharp, \text{ss}} \times \widehat{\mathcal{M}_0}^{V_0, \text{ss}},$$

and (V^\sharp, V_0) runs over pairs in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp \times \mathcal{R}_{(1, 0)}(\mathbf{k})$ with $\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V) \simeq \tilde{V}$. Note that the indexing on the right hand side of (5.6) is determined by our choice of trivialization (5.1).

Corollary 5.7. *For a pair (V^\sharp, V_0) , with $(\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{V^\sharp} \times \mathcal{M}_0^{V_0})^{\text{ss}}(\mathbb{F})$ non-empty, there is an isomorphism of formal stacks over $\text{Spf } W$*

$$\widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}} \simeq [(I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash (\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0 \times G^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K^{V^\sharp, p} \times G_0^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K_0^p)].$$

□

6. SPECIAL CYCLES IN THE SUPERSINGULAR LOCUS

In this section, we utilize the uniformization described in the previous section to study the intersection of our special cycles with the supersingular locus. To lighten notation, we write $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)$ for $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } W$, \mathcal{M}_0 for $\mathcal{M}_0 \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } W$, and \mathcal{M} for $\mathcal{M} \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } W$. We denote the supersingular locus by $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\text{ss}}$, $\mathcal{M}_0^{\text{ss}}$, and \mathcal{M}^{ss} , respectively. We continue to treat the case $p \neq 2$, where it is (sometimes) necessary to keep track of the type of the G_1^V -genera. When $p = 2$ is inert, the G_1^V -genera do not play a role.

For $T \in \text{Herm}_m(\mathbf{k})$, we write $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ for $\mathcal{Z}(T) \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } W$, and introduce the fiber product:

$$(6.1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T) & \longrightarrow & \widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}} \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathcal{Z}(T) & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{M}. \end{array}$$

Note that the formal stack $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$ is the formal completion of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ along $\mathcal{Z}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T) = \mathcal{Z}(T) \times_{\mathcal{M}} \mathcal{M}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}$.

Having fixed a base point $(A^\circ, \iota^\circ, \lambda^\circ; E^\circ, \iota^\circ, \lambda_0^\circ)$ in $\mathcal{M}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(\mathbb{F})$ and lifts \tilde{A}° and \tilde{E}° to W , etc., as in the previous section, we have the uniformization of $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}$ given by Corollary 5.7. Our goal is to give a similar uniformization of the formal stack $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$.

To the base point $(A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o; E^o, \iota^o, \lambda_0^o)$ in $(\mathcal{M} \times \mathcal{M}_0)^{\text{ss}}(\mathbb{F})$ there are associated two hermitian spaces, \tilde{V} and \tilde{V}' . Here $\tilde{V} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V)$; it may also be characterized as the unique relevant space in $\mathcal{R}_{(n-r, r)}(\mathbf{k})$ such that

$$(6.2) \quad \tilde{V} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p \simeq \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E^o)^0, T^p(A^o)^0),$$

i.e., \tilde{V} is uniquely defined by the condition that $(A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o; E^o, \iota^o, \lambda_0^o) \in \mathcal{M}^{\tilde{V}, \text{ss}}(\mathbb{F})$. Note that the isomorphism (6.2) is determined by our choices of η and η_0 as in (5.2).

The space \tilde{V}' is given as

$$(6.3) \quad \tilde{V}' = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o, A^o)$$

with hermitian form defined by

$$(6.4) \quad h'(x, y) = (\lambda_0^o)^{-1} \circ y^{\vee} \circ \lambda^o \circ x.$$

Note that the natural action of the group $I^V(\mathbb{Q})$ (resp. $I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$) on V by post-multiplication (resp. by pre-multiplication) preserves this hermitian form. For $x \in \tilde{V}'$, let

$$(6.5) \quad \underline{x} = \eta^o \circ x \circ (\eta_0^o)^{-1} \in \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(V_0(\mathbb{A}_f^p), V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)),$$

and let

$$(6.6) \quad \underline{\underline{x}} \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p}(\mathbb{X}_0, \mathbb{X}) = \mathbb{V}$$

be the corresponding homomorphisms. Note that there is a natural action of the group $I^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$ (resp. $I^V(\mathbb{Q}_p) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}_p)$) on the space $\text{Hom}(V_0(\mathbb{A}_f^p), V(\mathbb{A}_f^p))$ (resp. \mathbb{V}), and the maps $x \mapsto \underline{x}$ and $x \mapsto \underline{\underline{x}}$ are $I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$ -equivariant.

Lemma 6.1. *a) The hermitian spaces \tilde{V} and \tilde{V}' are isomorphic at all finite places $\ell \neq p$. At the archimedean place \tilde{V} has signature $(n-r, r)$ and Hasse invariant $(-1)^r$, whereas \tilde{V}' has signature $(n, 0)$ and Hasse invariant 1.*

b) $I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \simeq U(\tilde{V}')(\mathbb{Q})$, and $I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}) \simeq \mathbf{k}^1 = \ker(\text{Nm}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}})$.

Proof. Recall that $(A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o) \in \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{\tilde{V}}(\mathbb{F})$ is supersingular; hence we can choose an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -equivariant isogeny $A^o \simeq (E^o)^n$. This yields, in turn, compatible isomorphisms

$$\tilde{V}'(\mathbb{Q}) = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o, A^o) \simeq \text{End}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o)^n = \mathbf{k}^n,$$

and

$$\text{End}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(A^o) \simeq M_n(\text{End}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o)) = M_n(\mathbf{k}).$$

Hence also the natural map

$$(6.7) \quad \tilde{V}' \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p \rightarrow \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(T^p(E^o)^0, T^p(A^o)^0)$$

is an isomorphism. This proves a).

For b) note that there are obvious homomorphisms $I^V \rightarrow U(\tilde{V}')$ and $I^{V_0} \rightarrow \ker(\text{Nm}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}})$ of algebraic groups over \mathbb{Q} . Since these induce isomorphisms $I^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \simeq U(\tilde{V}')(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$, and $I^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \simeq (\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p)^1$, these homomorphisms are isomorphisms, and induce on the \mathbb{Q} -points the isomorphisms in b). \square

In order to state our uniformization result for special cycles, we need the following definition of special cycles in $\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}^0$, which is a slight variant of Definition 3.2 of [48].

Definition 6.2. For a collection $\underline{\mathbf{x}} \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p}(\mathbb{X}_0, \mathbb{X})^m$, let $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}})$ be the subfunctor of $\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0$, where $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}})(S)$ is the set of isomorphism classes of collections $(X, \iota, \lambda_X; Y, \iota, \lambda_Y)$ in $(\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0)(S)$ such that the quasi-homomorphism

$$\rho_X^{-1} \circ \underline{\mathbf{x}} \circ \rho_Y : Y^m \times_S \bar{S} \longrightarrow X \times_S \bar{S}$$

extends to a homomorphism from Y^m to X . Here $S \in \text{Nilp}_W$, and $\bar{S} = S \times_W \mathbb{F}$ is the special fiber of S .

Proposition 6.3. Fix a base point $(A^o, \iota^o, \lambda^o; E^o, \iota^o, \lambda_0^o)$ in $\mathcal{M}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(\mathbb{F})$, and define \tilde{V}' by (6.3). For $S \in \text{Nilp}_W$, define $\text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0)(S)$ (the incidence set) inside

$$((\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0)(S) \times (G^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K^{V^\sharp, p} \times G^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K_0^p)) \times \tilde{V}'(\mathbb{Q})^m$$

to be the subset of collections $(\xi, \xi_0, gK^{V^\sharp, p}, g_0K_0^p; \mathbf{x}^o)$ determined by the following incidence relations:

- (a) $h'(\mathbf{x}^o, \mathbf{x}^o) = T$.
- (b) $g^{-1} \circ \underline{\mathbf{x}}^o \circ g_0 \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \hat{\mathbb{Z}}_p}(T^p(E^o), T^p(A^o))^m$.
- (c) $(\xi, \xi_0) \in \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o) \subset (\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0)(S)$.

Then $\text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0)(S)$ is the set of S -points of the formal scheme

$$\text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0) = \coprod_{(gK^{V^\sharp, p}, g_0K_0^p)} \coprod_{\mathbf{x}^o} \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o),$$

where $(gK^{V^\sharp, p}, g_0K_0^p)$ runs over $G^V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K^{V^\sharp, p} \times G^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^0 / K_0^p$, and $\mathbf{x}^o \in \tilde{V}'(\mathbb{Q})^m$ runs over the set of m -tuples satisfying conditions (a) and (b). Moreover, there is an isomorphism of formal stacks over W , compatible with the uniformization isomorphism for $\widehat{\mathcal{M}}^{(V, V_0), \text{ss}}$ in Corollary 5.7,

$$(I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash \text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0) \xrightarrow{\sim} \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T).$$

Proof. Let us recall our fixed trivialization (5.1) of the prime-to- p units. Then in the notation of Proposition 5.3, the pair $(\xi, gK^{V^\sharp, p})$, resp. $(\xi_0, g_0K_0^p)$

determines (A, ι, λ) , resp. (E, ι_0, λ_0) , and a quasi-isogeny $\phi : A \rightarrow \tilde{A}_S^o$, resp. $\phi_0 : E \rightarrow \tilde{E}_S^o$. Let $\mathbf{x} \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}, S}(E, A)^m$ be in $\mathcal{Z}(T)(S)$.

Let

$$(6.8) \quad \mathbf{x}^0 = \phi \circ \mathbf{x} \circ \phi_0^{-1} \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}, S}(E^o, A^o)^m = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o, A^o)^m = \tilde{V}'(\mathbb{Q})^m,$$

be the corresponding collection of quasi-isogenies, and let

$$\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o = \eta^o \circ \mathbf{x}^o \circ (\eta_0^o)^{-1} \in \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{A}_f^p}(V_0(\mathbb{A}_f^p), V(\mathbb{A}_f^p))^m,$$

and let

$$\underline{\underline{\mathbf{x}}}^o \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p}}^0(\mathbb{X}_0, \mathbb{X})^m$$

be the collection of quasi-isogenies of p -divisible groups induced by \mathbf{x}^o . By (i) of Proposition 5.3, we have

$$h'(\mathbf{x}^o, \mathbf{x}^o) = h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T,$$

i.e., condition (a) holds. Condition (b) follows immediately from (ii) of Proposition 5.3. Finally, by (iii) of Proposition 5.3,

$$(X(A), \iota, \lambda, (\phi_*)_{\bar{S}}; X(E), \iota_0, \lambda_0, ((\phi_0)_*)_{\bar{S}}, \underline{\underline{\mathbf{x}}}) \in \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\underline{\mathbf{x}}}^o)(S),$$

where $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\underline{\mathbf{x}}}^o)$ is the cycle in $\mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0$ defined above.

Conversely, if a collection \mathbf{x}^o satisfying (a), (b) and (c) is given, the collection

$$\mathbf{x} = \phi^{-1} \circ \mathbf{x}^o \circ \phi_0 \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}, S}(E, A)^m$$

actually lies in $\text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}, S}(E, A)^m$ and satisfies $h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T$.

Finally, it is easy to check that dividing out by the action of $I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$ yields an identification with $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$. \square

Remark 6.4. When $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$, so that $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has support in the supersingular locus, there is a decomposition

$$(6.9) \quad \mathcal{Z}(T) = \coprod_{(V^\sharp, V_0)} \mathcal{Z}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T).$$

Suppose that $\mathcal{Z}(T)^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}} \neq \emptyset$. As before, let $\tilde{V} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V)$ and let \tilde{V}' be the unique positive definite hermitian space such that $\text{inv}_\ell(\tilde{V}') = \text{inv}_\ell(\tilde{V})$ for all $\ell \neq p$. Then $\tilde{V}' \simeq V_T$, where $V_T = \mathbf{k}^n$ with hermitian form given by T . Indeed, for any point $(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x}) \in \mathcal{Z}(T)^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}$, the last entry defines a \mathbf{k} -linear map $\mathbf{k}^n \rightarrow \tilde{V}' = \text{End}_{\mathbf{k}}^0(E, A)$ which is an isometry. Thus, the index set in (6.9) runs over the pairs (V^\sharp, V_0) such that $\tilde{V}' \simeq V_T$.

Part III: Eisenstein series

In the next four sections, we review some material concerning theta integrals, Eisenstein series, the Siegel-Weil formula, etc. that will be needed

in formulating our main results. We refer to [26], [32], and [39] for more details.

7. THE THETA INTEGRAL

For the moment, we shift notation and allow V to be any nondegenerate hermitian space over \mathbf{k} of dimension m . Let $G_1 = \mathrm{U}(V)$ and let $H = \mathrm{U}(n, n) = \mathrm{U}(W_0)$, where W_0 is a split skew hermitian space of dimension $2n$. Let $W = V \otimes_{\mathbf{k}} W_0$, with symplectic form,

$$\langle\langle v_1 \otimes w_1, v_2 \otimes w_2 \rangle\rangle = \mathrm{tr}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}}((v_1, v_2)\langle w_1, w_2 \rangle),$$

as in [26]. There is a homomorphism $G_1 \times H \rightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(W)$ and (G_1, H) is a reductive dual pair.

We fix a character η of $\mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}}^{\times}$ whose restriction to $\mathbb{Q}_{\mathbb{A}}^{\times}$ is χ^m , where $m = \dim_{\mathbf{k}} V$ and χ is the global quadratic character attached to \mathbf{k} . As explained in [26], the choice of η determines a homomorphism

$$G_1(\mathbb{A}) \times H(\mathbb{A}) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Mp}(W)(\mathbb{A})$$

where $\mathrm{Mp}(W)(\mathbb{A})$ is the metaplectic cover of $\mathrm{Sp}(W)(\mathbb{A})$ and hence a Weil representation⁴ ω of the group $G_1(\mathbb{A}) \times H(\mathbb{A})$ on the Schwartz space $S(V(\mathbb{A})^n)$. We normalize this so that the action of $G_1(\mathbb{A})$ is given by $(\omega(g, 1)\varphi)(x) = \varphi(g^{-1}x)$. The theta function attached to $\varphi \in S(V(\mathbb{A})^n)$ is then

$$\theta(g, h; \varphi) = \sum_{x \in V(\mathbb{Q})^n} \omega(h)\varphi(g^{-1}x),$$

where $g \in G_1(\mathbb{A})$ and $h \in H(\mathbb{A})$.

We now suppose that $m = n$ and that $\mathrm{sig}(V) = (n, 0)$. The theta integral is then

$$I(h; \varphi) = \int_{G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1(\mathbb{A})} \theta(g, h; \varphi) dg,$$

where the Haar measure dg is taken so that $\mathrm{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1(\mathbb{A})) = 1$. We take $\varphi = \varphi_{\infty} \otimes \varphi_f$ where

$$(7.1) \quad \varphi_{\infty}(x) = e^{-2\pi \mathrm{tr}(x, x)}$$

is the Gaussian, and φ_f is the characteristic function of $(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}})^n$ for an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice L in V . We take $K_1 \subset G_1(\mathbb{A}_f)$ to be the stabilizer of $L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ and we note that

$$\varphi_{\infty}(g^{-1}x) = \varphi_{\infty}(x)$$

⁴We also fix the standard additive character ψ of \mathbb{A} , trivial on \mathbb{Q} and on $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ and such that, for $x \in \mathbb{R}$, $\psi(x) = e^{2\pi i x}$.

for $g \in G_1(\mathbb{R})$. Write

$$G_1(\mathbb{A}_f) = \prod_j G_1(\mathbb{Q})g_jK_1.$$

Then

$$I(h; \varphi) = \text{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{R})K_1) \cdot \sum_j |\Gamma_j|^{-1} \sum_{x \in V(\mathbb{Q})^n} \omega(h) \varphi(g_j^{-1}x),$$

where $\Gamma_j = G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \cap g_jK_1g_j^{-1}$ is the group of isometries of the hermitian lattice $L_j = (g_jL \otimes \hat{\mathbb{Z}}) \cap V(\mathbb{Q})$, and the lattice L_j runs over representatives for the classes in the G_1 -genus of L . Note that

$$1 = \text{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1(\mathbb{A})) = \text{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{R})K_1) \cdot \sum_j |\Gamma_j|^{-1},$$

so that

$$(7.2) \quad \text{mass}(L) := \sum_j |\Gamma_j|^{-1} = \text{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{R})K_1)^{-1}$$

is the classical mass of the genus of L .

Taking $h_f = 1$, we have

$$I(h; \varphi) = \text{mass}(L)^{-1} \sum_j |\Gamma_j|^{-1} \sum_{x \in L_j^n} \omega_\infty(h) \varphi_\infty(x).$$

Let $D(W_0)$ be the space of negative n -planes in $W_0(\mathbb{R})$, so that

$$D(W_0) \simeq \{z \in M_n(\mathbb{C}) \mid v(z) := (2i)^{-1}(z - {}^t\bar{z}) > 0\}.$$

Write $z = u(z) + iv(z)$, with $u(z) = 2^{-1}(z + {}^t\bar{z})$, and let

$$(7.3) \quad h_z = \begin{pmatrix} 1_n & u(z) \\ & 1_n \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} a & \\ & {}^t\bar{a}^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \in H(\mathbb{R}),$$

where $a \in \text{GL}_n(\mathbb{C})$ with $v(z) = a^t\bar{a}$. Note that $h_z(i1_n) = z$. Now taking $h_\infty = h_z$, we have

$$(7.4) \quad \omega_\infty(h_z) \varphi_\infty(x) = \eta_\infty(\det(a)) \det(v(z))^{\frac{n}{2}} q^{(x,x)},$$

where, for $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathbb{C})$, we write $q^T = e(\text{tr}(Tz))$. Thus, we obtain the classical expression⁵

$$(7.5) \quad \begin{aligned} I(z; L) &:= \eta_\infty(\det(a))^{-1} \det(v(z))^{-\frac{n}{2}} I(h_z; \varphi) \\ &= \text{mass}(L)^{-1} \cdot \sum_{T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)} r_{\text{gen}}(T, L) q^T. \end{aligned}$$

Here the T -th Fourier coefficient is the representation number

$$(7.6) \quad r_{\text{gen}}(T, L) = \sum_j |\Gamma_j|^{-1} |\Omega(T, L_j)|,$$

⁵This is called the analytic genus invariant in Siegel [73] and Braun [10].

where L_j runs over the classes of lattices in the G_1 -genus of L , and

$$\Omega(T, L_j) = \{ x \in L_j^n \mid (x, x) = T \}.$$

8. THE SIEGEL FORMULA

Now we assume that $\det(T) \neq 0$ and we express $I_T(z; L)$, the T -th Fourier coefficient of the theta integral defined in (7.5) in terms of local densities. This is done in detail in section 6 of Ichino, [32], as part of the proof of the regularized Siegel-Weil formula for unitary groups. Here we specialize his formulas to the case where $\dim(V) = n$.

We slightly shift notation and take dg to be Tamagawa measure on $G_1(\mathbb{A})$, defined with respect to a gauge form ν_{G_1} on G_1 . Since the Tamagawa number of G_1 is 2, we include a factor of $\frac{1}{2}$ in the definition of the theta integral. For general factorizable $\varphi = \otimes_v \varphi_v \in S(V(\mathbb{A})^n)$, Ichino obtains,

$$I_T(h; \varphi) = \frac{1}{2} L(1, \chi)^{-1} \prod_v \lambda_v^{-1} \int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)} \omega(h_v) \varphi_v(x) d\mu_{T,v}(x),$$

where the convergence factors are

$$(8.1) \quad \lambda_v^{-1} = L_v(1, \chi_v),$$

and where $\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ is the set of \mathbb{Q}_v -points of the variety

$$\Omega_T = \{ x \in V^n \mid (x, x) = T \}.$$

The measures $d\mu_{T,v}$ are defined as follows. We choose $x \in V(\mathbb{Q}_v)^n$ with $(x, x) = T$, and define an isomorphism $i_x : G_1(\mathbb{Q}_v) \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ via $g_v \mapsto g_v \cdot x$. The measure $d\mu_{T,v}$ on $\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ is obtained, via this isomorphism, from the Tamagawa measure dg_v on $G_1(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ determined by ν_{G_1} . Note that, for a place $v \notin S$, for a sufficiently large finite set of places S including the archimedean place,

$$\int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)} \omega(h_v) \varphi_v(x) d\mu_{T,v}(x) = \prod_{i=1}^n L_v(n - i + 1, \chi_v^{n-i+1})^{-1},$$

so that ⁶

$$\begin{aligned}
I_T(h; \varphi) &= \frac{1}{2} L(1, \chi)^{-1} \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} L^S(n-i+1, \chi^{n-i+1})^{-1} \\
&\quad \times \prod_{v \in S} \lambda_v^{-1} \int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)} \omega(h_v) \varphi_v(x) d\mu_{T,v}(x) \\
&= \frac{1}{2} \prod_{i=1}^n L^S(n-i+1, \chi^{n-i+1})^{-1} \prod_{v \in S} \int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)} \omega(h_v) \varphi_v(x) d\mu_{T,v}(x).
\end{aligned}$$

On the other hand, if $\Phi(s)$ is the Siegel-Weil section associated to a factorizable φ , we have a factorization, [32] [74],

$$E_T(h, s, \Phi) = L^S(2s, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{v \in S} W_{T,v}(h_v, s, \Phi_v),$$

of the T -th Fourier coefficient of the Eisenstein series again, for a sufficiently large finite set of places S , where, for convenience, we set

$$(8.2) \quad L^S(2s, n, \chi) = \prod_{i=1}^n L^S(2s + n - i + 1, \chi^{n-i+1}).$$

Here, for $\operatorname{Re}(s) > n$, the Whittaker function (discussed in more detail in section 10 below) is given by

$$(8.3) \quad W_{T,v}(h_v, s, \Phi_v) = \int_{\operatorname{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_v)} \Phi_v(w^{-1}n(b_v)h_v, s) \psi_v(-\operatorname{tr}(Tb_v)) db_v,$$

where db_v is the self-dual measure on $\operatorname{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_v)$ with respect to the pairing $\langle b_1, b_2 \rangle = \psi_v(\operatorname{tr}(b_1 b_2))$. By a standard argument due to Weil, [81], [64], see also [50], p. 127, at $s = 0$ we have

$$(8.4) \quad W_{T,v}(h_v, 0, \Phi_v) = \gamma_v \int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_v)} \omega(h_v) \varphi_v(x) d\mu_{T,v}(x),$$

where γ_v is a Weil index. Note that, in this identity, the gauge form ν_{G_1} defining the measure $d\mu_{T,v}$ is the one determined by the moment map (10.3). This point is discussed in more detail in section 10, below. Since, for S sufficiently large,

$$\prod_{v \in S} \gamma_v = 1,$$

this proves that

$$(8.5) \quad 2 I_T(h; \varphi) = E_T(h, 0, \Phi).$$

⁶Here, as usual, the superscript S indicates that the Euler factors for the primes in S are omitted.

In particular, taking $h = h_z$ as in (7.3), we have

$$(8.6) \quad 2 I_T(z; \varphi) = \eta_\infty(\det(a))^{-1} \det(v(z))^{-\frac{n}{2}} E_T(h_z, 0, \Phi).$$

Let $\Phi_\infty^n(s)$ be the Siegel-Weil section associated to the Gaussian (7.1), and let $\Phi_f(s)$ be the standard Siegel-Weil section associate to φ_f , the characteristic function of $(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}})^n$. We obtain the fundamental identity

$$(8.7) \quad 2 \operatorname{mass}(L)^{-1} r_{\text{gen}}(T, L) q^T \\ = L^S(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{\ell \in S_f} W_{T, \ell}(0, \Phi_\ell) \cdot W_{T, \infty}(h_z, 0, \Phi_\infty^n),$$

for a sufficiently large set of primes $S = S_f \cup \{\infty\}$. Here $\Phi_\ell(s)$ is the Siegel-Weil section attached to φ_ℓ , the characteristic function of the set $(L \otimes \mathbb{Z}_\ell)^n$.

9. THE INCOHERENT CASE

We now turn to the incoherent case. Fix a hermitian space V with signature $(n-1, 1)$ and assume that V contains a self-dual lattice L , i.e., that V is relevant in the sense of section 2. Take $\varphi_f \in S(V(\mathbb{A}_f)^n)$ to be the characteristic function of $(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}})^n$. The incoherent Eisenstein series is defined to be $E(h, s, \Phi)$ for $\Phi(s) = \Phi(s, L) = \Phi_\infty(s) \otimes \Phi_f(s, L)$ where $\Phi_f(s, L)$ is the Siegel-Weil section associated to φ_f and $\Phi_\infty(s) = \Phi_\infty^n(s)$ is the Siegel-Weil section attached to the Gaussian of a hermitian space of signature $(n, 0)$. As in the previous section, e.g., (8.6), we let

$$(9.1) \quad E(z, s, \Phi) = \eta_\infty(\det(a))^{-1} \det(v(z))^{-\frac{n}{2}} E(h_z, s, \Phi)$$

be the corresponding ‘classical’ Eisenstein series. As explained in [39] (in the orthogonal case), $E(z, 0, \Phi) = 0$ and we are interested in the central derivative $E'(z, 0, \Phi)$.

For $T \in \operatorname{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k})$ with $\det(T) \neq 0$, let

$$(9.2) \quad \operatorname{Diff}(T, V) = \{ p < \infty \mid \chi_p(\det(T)) = -\chi_p(\det(V)) \}.$$

Note that only ramified or inert primes can occur in this set. Moreover, if $T > 0$, then $1 = \chi_\infty(\det(T)) = -\chi_\infty(\det(V))$, and hence $\operatorname{Diff}(T, V)$ has odd cardinality, due to the product formula (1.2). Finally, since V contains a self dual lattice, an inert place p lies in $\operatorname{Diff}(T, V)$ if and only if $\operatorname{ord}_p(\det(T))$ is odd. By the analysis reviewed in the previous section,

$$E_T(h, s, \Phi) = L^S(2s, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{v \in S} W_{T, v}(h_v, s, \Phi_v),$$

for a sufficiently large finite set S of places including the archimedean place. We assume that S contains $\text{Diff}(T, V)$. By the same argument as in [39],

$$W_{T,p}(h_p, 0, \Phi_p) = 0,$$

for all $p \in \text{Diff}(T, V)$, since V_p does not represent T . This implies the following.

Lemma 9.1. (i) If $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k})_{>0}$, and $|\text{Diff}(T, V)| > 1$, then

$$E'_T(h, 0, \Phi) = 0.$$

(ii) If $\text{Diff}(T, V) = \{p\}$, then

$$E'_T(h, 0, \Phi) = W'_{T,p}(h_p, 0, \Phi_p) \cdot L^S(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{\substack{v \in S \\ v \neq p}} W_{T,v}(h_v, 0, \Phi_v).$$

(iii) If $\text{Diff}(T, V)$ is empty, so that $\text{sig}(T) = (n - r, r)$ for r odd, then

$$E'_T(h, 0, \Phi) = W'_{T,\infty}(h_\infty, 0, \Phi_\infty) \cdot L^S(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{\substack{v \in S \\ v \neq \infty}} W_{T,v}(h_v, 0, \Phi_v).$$

These formulas can be made more explicit; we will only do this in a special case. We take $h = h_z$, as above and note that, by analogy with Lemma 5.2.1 of [50], $E_T(h_z, s, \Phi)$ vanishes unless $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})$.

Remark 9.2. In this situation, we will abbreviate the notation and write $W_{T,p}(s, \Phi_p)$ for $W_{T,p}(e, s, \Phi_p)$ for a finite prime p .

We suppose that $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ with $\text{Diff}(T, V) = \{p\}$ for an odd inert prime p . Let $V' = V_T$, so that $\text{inv}_p(V') = -\text{inv}_p(V)$ and $\text{inv}_\ell(V') = \text{inv}_\ell(V)$ for all other finite primes. Fix an isomorphism $V'(\mathbb{A}_f^p) = V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$, and let L' be the lattice in V' determined by $L' \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p = L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$ and $L'_p = \Lambda^*$ where $\Lambda \subset V'_p$ is a vertex of type 1 and level 0 as in section 11. Let $\varphi'_p \in S((V'_p)^n)$ be the characteristic function of $(L'_p)^n$, and let $\varphi' = \varphi'_p \otimes \varphi^p$ where $\varphi^p \in S(V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)^n)$ is the characteristic function of $(L \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p)^n$. The following facts will be proved in the next section.

Proposition 9.3. For $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ with $\text{Diff}(T, V) = \{p\}$ for an odd inert prime p , suppose that, under the action of $\text{GL}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$,

$$T \sim \text{diag}(1_{n-2}, p^a, p^b), \quad 0 \leq a < b.$$

(i) Let $\Phi_p(s)$ be the Siegel-Weil section associated to the characteristic function φ_p of the set $(L \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p)^n$ in $V(\mathbb{Q}_p)^n$. Then

$$W'_{T,p}(0, \Phi_p) = \gamma_p(V)^n L_p(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \mu_p(T) \log(p),$$

where

$$\mu_p(T) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\ell=0}^a p^\ell (a + b - 2\ell + 1),$$

and

$$L_p(2s, n, \chi) = \prod_{i=1}^n L_p(2s + n - i + 1, \chi_p^{n-i+1}).$$

(ii) Let $\Phi'_p(s)$ be the Siegel-Weil section associated to the characteristic function φ'_p of the set $(L'_p)^n$ in $(V'_p)^n$, where $L'_p = \Lambda^*$ for $\Lambda \subset V'_p$ a vertex of type 1 and level 0. Then

$$W_{T,p}(0, \Phi'_p) = (-1)^n \gamma_p(V)^n L_p(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot p^{-n} \frac{1 - (-1)^{n+1} p^{-n-1}}{1 - p^{-2}}.$$

In particular, this quantity is nonzero and independent of T .

Using the nonvanishing in (ii), we can write

$$\begin{aligned} E'_T(h, 0, \Phi) &= \frac{W'_{T,p}(0, \Phi_p)}{W_{T,p}(0, \Phi'_p)} \cdot L^S(0, n, \chi)^{-1} \cdot \prod_{v \in S} W_{T,v}(h_v, 0, \Phi'_v) \\ &= \frac{W'_{T,p}(0, \Phi_p)}{W_{T,p}(0, \Phi'_p)} \cdot 2 I_T(h, \varphi'). \end{aligned}$$

Then, using (8.7) and Proposition 9.3, we obtain the expression

$$E'_T(z, 0, \Phi) = \mu_p(T) \log(p) \cdot C_p \cdot 2 \operatorname{mass}(L')^{-1} r_{\text{gen}}(T, L') \cdot q^T,$$

where

$$C_p = p^n \frac{1 - p^{-2}}{1 - (-1)^{n+1} p^{-n-1}}.$$

Finally, we write $G'_1 = U(V')$ and note that $G_1 = U(V)$ and G'_1 are inner forms of each other. Our fixed choice of a gauge form $\nu_1 = \nu_{G_1}$ on G_1 determines a gauge form $\nu'_1 = \nu_{G'_1}$ on G'_1 and hence there are associated Haar measures on $G_1(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ and $G'_1(\mathbb{Q}_p)$. Now, by (7.2) for the positive definite space V' , we have

$$2 \operatorname{mass}(L')^{-1} = \operatorname{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R}) K'_1, d\nu'_1)$$

where the volume is taken with respect to Tamagawa measure and our fixed convergence factors (8.1). By (iii) of Lemma 10.5, we have

$$C_p \cdot \operatorname{vol}(K'_{1,p}, d\nu'_1) = \operatorname{vol}(K_{1,p}, d\nu_1).$$

Thus

$$C_p \cdot 2 \operatorname{mass}(L')^{-1} = \operatorname{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R})) \operatorname{vol}(K_1, d\nu_1).$$

As we will see in a moment, the quantity $\operatorname{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R}), d\nu'_1)$ is independent of p . For later convenience, we will now write

$$(9.3) \quad E(z, s, L) = E(z, s, \Phi)$$

to emphasize the dependence on the choice of the self-dual lattice L .

Corollary 9.4. *For $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ with $\text{Diff}(T, V) = \{p\}$ for an odd inert prime p , suppose that T satisfies the condition of Proposition 9.3. Then*

$$E'_T(z, 0, L) = C \cdot \mu_p(T) \log(p) \cdot r_{\text{gen}}(T, L') \cdot q^T,$$

where L' is the almost self-dual lattice obtained from L as in (ii) of Proposition 9.3 and $C = \text{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R})) \text{vol}(K_1, d\nu_1)$.

Finally, the constant $C = \text{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R}))\text{vol}(K_1)$ has the following nice interpretation.

Lemma 9.5.

$$C^{-1} = \frac{(-1)^{n-1}}{n} \cdot \chi(G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash (D \times G_1(\mathbb{A}_f)/K_1)),$$

where

$$\chi(\Gamma \backslash D) = \int_{\Gamma \backslash D} \Omega,$$

is the integral of the Gauss-Bonnet form Ω .

Proof. First note that, for Tamagawa measure,

$$1 = \text{vol}(G_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1(\mathbb{A})) = \left(\sum_j \text{vol}(\Gamma_j \backslash G_1(\mathbb{R})) \right) \cdot \text{vol}(K_1),$$

where

$$G_1(\mathbb{A}) = \prod_j G_1(\mathbb{Q}) G_1(\mathbb{R}) g_j K_1$$

and $\Gamma_j = G(\mathbb{Q}) \cap g_j K_1 g_j^{-1}$. Thus

$$\text{vol}(K_1)^{-1} = \sum_j \text{vol}(\Gamma_j \backslash G_1(\mathbb{R}))$$

and so

$$C^{-1} = \text{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R}))^{-1} \cdot \sum_j \text{vol}(\Gamma_j \backslash G_1(\mathbb{R})).$$

Here we are using the measure obtained from matching gauge forms on $G_1(\mathbb{R}) = U(n-1, 1)$ and its compact dual $G'_1(\mathbb{R}) = U(n)$, i.e., the gauge form on $G_{1,\mathbb{C}}$ used to define our global Tamagawa measure. But then, the ratio is independent of the choice of this gauge form. Now write the real Lie algebra of G_1 as $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{k} + \mathfrak{p}$ where $\dim \mathfrak{p} = 2n-2$ and $\mathfrak{g}' = \mathfrak{k} + i\mathfrak{p}$. We can use the standard recipe, described in Serre's article [70] on Euler-Poincare measures, pp.135-138, to give a top degree form Ω on \mathfrak{p} (degree $2n-2$) such that

$$\text{vol}(\Gamma \backslash D, \Omega) = \chi(\Gamma \backslash D),$$

for $\chi(\Gamma \backslash D)$ the Euler characteristic of the manifold $\Gamma \backslash D$, when Γ is torsion free, i.e., Ω gives the Gauss-Bonnet form on D , [25]. We can extend this to \mathfrak{g} by wedging with a top degree form η on \mathfrak{k} which gives the corresponding maximal compact subgroup volume 1. According to [70] p.136, the resulting measure μ on $G_1(\mathbb{R})$ is an Euler-Poincare measure. Then, since the form on $i\mathfrak{p}$ corresponds to $(-1)^{n-1}$ times the Gauss-Bonnet form on $\mathbb{P}^{n-1}(\mathbb{C})$, the measure of $G'_1(\mathbb{R})$ is

$$\text{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R})) = \text{vol}(\mathbb{P}^{n-1}(\mathbb{C})) = (-1)^{n-1} \chi(\mathbb{P}^{n-1}(\mathbb{C})) = (-1)^{n-1} n.$$

□

10. REPRESENTATION DENSITIES

In this section, we derive the information about local Whittaker functions and their central derivatives summarized in Proposition 9.3 from various explicit formulas for representation densities of hermitian forms.

Recall that the classical representation densities are define as follows. For nonsingular matrices $S \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$ and $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$, let

$$A_{p^k}(S, T) = \{ x \in M_{m,n}(O_{\mathbf{k}}/p^k O_{\mathbf{k}}) \mid S[x] \equiv T \pmod{p^k \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})}^\vee \},$$

where

$$\text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})^\vee = \{ b \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}) \mid \text{tr}(bc) \in O_{\mathbf{k}} \text{ for all } c \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}}) \}.$$

The representation density is then defined as the limit

$$\alpha_p(S, T) = \lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} (p^{-k})^{n(2m-n)} |A_{p^k}(S, T)|.$$

An explicit formula for $\alpha_p(S, T)$ has been given by Hironaka, [27], in the case of an inert prime p .

These quantities are related to the Whittaker functions $W_{T,p}(s, \Phi_p)$ where $\Phi_p(s)$ is the Siegel-Weil section determined by the characteristic function $\varphi_p \in S(V_p^n)$ of $(L_p)^n$ for a lattice L_p on which the hermitian form has matrix S . We sketch the argument, which is analogous to that given for quadratic forms in [39], in order to be precise about the various constants involved.

Recall that

$$(10.1) \quad W_{T,p}(s, \Phi_p) = \int_{\text{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_p)} \Phi_p(w^{-1}n(b), s) \psi_p(-\text{tr}(Tb)) db.$$

where⁷

$$w = \begin{pmatrix} & 1_n \\ -1_n & \end{pmatrix}$$

⁷Note that the conventions here differ slightly from those of [26], (6.5).

and db is the self-dual measure with respect to the pairing

$$\langle b, c \rangle = \psi_p(\mathrm{tr}(bc))$$

on $\mathrm{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_p)$. In particular, note that

$$\mathrm{vol}(\mathrm{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}_p}), db) = |\Delta|_p^{n(n-1)/4}.$$

Proposition 10.1. *Let*

$$S_r = \begin{pmatrix} & & 1_r \\ & S & \\ 1_r & & \end{pmatrix}.$$

Then

$$W_{T,p}(r, \Phi_p) = \gamma_p(V)^n |N(\det S)|_p^{\frac{1}{2}n} |\Delta|_p^e \alpha_p(S_r, T),$$

where $\gamma_p(V)$ is an eight root of unity given by (10.2) and $e = \frac{1}{2}n(m+2r) + \frac{1}{4}n(n-1)$.

Proof. We first use Rallis's interpolation trick. Let $V_p^{[r]} = V_p \oplus V_{r,r}$ where $V_{r,r}$ is the split space of signature (r, r) , and let

$$\varphi_p^{[r]} = \varphi_p \otimes \varphi_{r,r} \in S((V_p^{[r]})^n)$$

where $\varphi_{r,r}$ is the characteristic function of $(L_{r,r})^n$ for a self-dual lattice $L_{r,r}$ in $V_{r,r}$. Then, as in [39], p.642,

$$\Phi_p(h, r) = \omega(h) \varphi_p^{[r]}(0),$$

where ω is the Weil representation of $H(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ on $S((V_p^{[r]})^n)$. Note that we use the character η to define the Weil representation for all r . Recall, [38], that for $w = w_n \in \mathrm{U}(n, n)$ as above,

$$\omega(w^{-1}) \varphi_p(x) = \gamma_p(V)^n \int_{V_p^n} \psi(-\mathrm{tr}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}_p} \mathrm{tr}(x, y)) \varphi_p(y) dy,$$

where

$$(10.2) \quad \gamma_p(V) = (\Delta, \det(V_p))_p \gamma_p(-\Delta, \eta)^m \gamma_p(-1, \eta)^{-m},$$

and dy is the self-dual measure with respect to the pairing

$$\langle x, y \rangle = \psi_p(\mathrm{tr}_{\mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q}_p} \mathrm{tr}(x, y))$$

on V_p . Inserting this in (10.1) and writing N for $\text{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_p)$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} W_{T,p}(r, \Phi_p) &= \int_N \psi_p(-\text{tr}(Tb)) \Phi_p(w^{-1}n(b), r) db \\ &= \int_N \psi_p(-\text{tr}(Tb)) \gamma_p(V)^n \int_{(V_p^{[r]})^n} \psi_p(\text{tr}(b(x, x))) \varphi_p^{[r]}(x) dx db \\ &= \gamma_p(V)^n |\Delta|_p^{n(n-1)/4} \lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} p^{kn^2} \int_{\substack{x \in (V_p^{[r]})^n \\ (x, x) - T \in p^k \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})^\vee}} \varphi_p^{[r]}(x) dx. \end{aligned}$$

Here, in the last step, we have computed the integral over N as the limit of the integrals over the sets $p^{-k} \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p}) \subset N$.

Take $\varphi_p = \varphi_{L_p}$ and choose an integral basis for $L_p \oplus L_{r,r}$ for which the hermitian form has matrix S_r , as above. Then $(L_p \oplus L_{r,r})^n = M_{m+2r,n}(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$, and we have

$$\text{vol}(M_{m+2r,n}(O_{\mathbf{k},p}), dx) = |N(\det S_r)|_p^{\frac{n}{2}} |N(\partial_p)|_p^{\frac{n(m+2r)}{2}} = |\det S_0|_p^n |\Delta|_p^{\frac{n(m+2r)}{2}},$$

where $|\cdot|_p$ is the norm on \mathbb{Q}_p and ∂_p is the different of $\mathbf{k}_p/\mathbb{Q}_p$. We break the integral up into cosets of $p^k M_{m+2r,n}(O_{\mathbf{k}})$ in $M_{m+2r,n}(O_{\mathbf{k}})$.

This gives

$$\begin{aligned} W_{T,p}(r, \Phi_p) &= \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n |\Delta|_p^e \lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} (p^k)^{n^2 - 2(m+2r)n} |A_{p^k}(S_r, T)| \\ &= \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n |\Delta|_p^e \alpha_p(S_r, T). \end{aligned}$$

where $e = \frac{n(m+2r)}{2} + n(n-1)/4$. □

Proof of Proposition 9.3. In the case of an odd inert prime, the formula above reduces to

$$W_{T,p}(r, \Phi_p) = \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n \alpha_p(S_r, T).$$

Now, by Proposition 9.1 of [48] (which uses Nagaoka's formula [59]), we have

$$\begin{aligned} W'_{T,p}(0, \Phi_p) &= \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n \alpha'_p(S, T) \log(p) \\ &= \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n \alpha_p(S, S) \mu_p(T) \log(p). \end{aligned}$$

This proves (i), where we note that

$$\alpha_p(S, S) = \prod_{i=1}^n (1 - (-1)^i p^{-i}) = L_p(0, n, \chi)^{-1}.$$

To prove (ii), let $S' = \text{diag}(1_{n-1}, p)$ and consider

$$W_{T,p}(0, \Phi'_p) = \gamma_p(V'_p)^n p^{-n} \alpha_p(S', T),$$

where, by (10.2), $\gamma_p(V'_p) = -\gamma_p(V_p)$. Note that S' is the matrix for the hermitian form of V'_p on the lattice Λ^* , where Λ is a vertex of type 1 and level 0 in V'_p . The analogue of the reduction formula of Proposition 9.3 of [48], which follows immediately from Corollary 9.12 of [48], implies that

$$\alpha_p(S', T) = \alpha_p(S', 1_{n-2}) \alpha_p(S'', T''),$$

where $S'' = \text{diag}(1, p)$ and $T'' = \text{diag}(p^a, p^b)$.

The last two factors are easy to calculate using Hironaka's formula.

Lemma 10.2.

$$\alpha_p(S', 1_{n-2}) = \prod_{i=2}^{n-1} (1 - (-1)^i p^{-i-2}).$$

Proposition 10.3.

$$\alpha_p(S'', T'') = (1 + p^{-1})(1 + p^{-3}).$$

In particular, this value is independent of a and b .

Proof. This value can, no doubt, be computed directly using Hironaka's formula, but the calculation required can be reduced considerably by the following trick. Observe that, since $a + b$ is odd, T'' is not represented by 1_2 , and hence $\alpha_p(1_2, T'') = 0$. On the other hand, Hironaka's formula [27], Theorem II, p.43, involves a sum on integral vectors $\mu = (d, c)$, with $d \geq c \geq 0$ such that $d \leq b + 1$ and $c \leq a + 1$ and this range of summation is the same for any nonsingular $S \in \text{Herm}_2(O_{\mathbf{k}})$ and, in particular for $S = 1_2$ and for S'' . Thus, writing

$$\alpha_p(S'', T'') = \alpha_p(S'', T'') - p^{-2} \alpha_p(1_2, T''),$$

it is easy to check that the right side here only involves terms for μ with $c = 0$. A relatively short computation then yields the given expression. \square

Corollary 10.4. *For $n \geq 2$,*

$$\alpha_p(S', T) = \alpha_p(S, S) \cdot \frac{1 - (-1)^{n+1} p^{-n-1}}{1 - p^{-2}}.$$

In particular, $\alpha_p(S', T)$ is independent of T .

This finishes the proof of Proposition 9.3. \square

Finally, we need to obtain some information about the dependence on p of the quantity $\text{mass}(L')$. To do this, we first record a few facts about the moment map

$$(10.3) \quad h : V^n \longrightarrow \text{Herm}_n, \quad x \mapsto (x, x),$$

for a hermitian space V . Let

$$V_{\text{reg}}^n = \{ x \in V^n \mid \det(h(x)) \neq 0 \}.$$

Let $G_1 = \text{U}(V)$ and note that for any $x \in V_{\text{reg}}^n$ with $h(x) = T$, the map

$$i_x : G_1 \xrightarrow{\sim} \Omega_T = h^{-1}(T), \quad g \mapsto g \cdot x$$

is an isomorphism.

Fix basis elements $\alpha \in \wedge^{\text{top}}(V^n)^*$ and $\beta \in \wedge^{\text{top}}(\text{Herm}_n)^*$ and write α and β for the translation invariant forms they define. Then there is a form ν of degree n^2 on V_{reg}^n such that (i) $\alpha = h^*\beta \wedge \nu$, (ii) ν is invariant under the action of $G_1 \times \text{GL}(n)$ on V^n and (iii) for all points $x \in V_{\text{reg}}^n$, the restriction of ν to $\ker(dh_x)$ is nonzero. In particular, the pullback $\nu_{G_1} = i_x^*\nu$ is a gauge form on G_1 which is independent of the choice of x . It determines a Tamagawa measure on $G_1(\mathbb{A})$ via a choice of convergence factors λ_v , as in (8.1) above. The analogous facts in the orthogonal case are described in detail in Lemma 5.3.1 of [50].

In the local situation, we have the following useful observations. The analogue of Lemma 4.2 of [64] implies that the distribution

$$\varphi \mapsto W_{T,p}(0, \Phi_\varphi)$$

on $S(V_p^n)$ is proportional to the orbital integral

$$O_{T,p}(\varphi) = \int_{\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_p)} \varphi(x) d_{T,p}(x),$$

where $d_{T,p}(x)$ is the measure on $\Omega_T(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ determined by the restriction of ν to Ω_T . More precisely, by the same argument as in pp. 121-127 of [50], we have

$$W_{T,p}(0, \Phi_\varphi) = C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi) \cdot O_{T,p}(\varphi),$$

where

$$C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi) = \frac{\gamma_p(V)^n c_p(\beta, \psi)}{c_p(\alpha, \psi)}.$$

Here

$$d_{\alpha,p}x = c_p(\alpha, \psi) dx,$$

where $d_{\alpha,p}x$ is the measure on V_p^n determined by the gauge form α and dx is the self-dual measure with respect to the pairing $\langle x, y \rangle = \psi_p(\text{tr}_{\mathbf{k}_p/\mathbb{Q}_p} \text{tr}(x, y))$. Similarly,

$$d_{\beta,p}b = c_p(\beta, \psi) db$$

where $d_{\beta,p}b$ is the measure on $\text{Herm}_n(\mathbf{k}_p)$ determined by the gauge form β and db is the self-dual measure with respect to the pairing $\langle b, c \rangle = \psi_p(\text{tr}(bc))$. Taking $\omega_p(h)\varphi$ in place of φ , we get

$$W_{T,p}(h, 0, \Phi_\varphi) = C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi) \cdot O_{T,p}(\omega(h)\varphi).$$

Note that, globally,

$$\prod_{p \leq \infty} C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi) = 1.$$

Lemma 10.5. (i) Let $L_p \subset V_p$ be an $O_{\mathbf{k},p}$ -lattice with basis $\{v_1, \dots, v_n\}$, and let $S = ((v_i, v_j))$ be the matrix for the hermitian form on L_p with respect to this basis. Let $K_p \subset U(V_p) = G_1(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ be the stabilizer of L_p . Then

$$h^{-1}(S) \cap L_p^n = K_p \cdot \mathbf{v},$$

where $\mathbf{v} = [v_1, \dots, v_n] \in V_p^n$.

(ii) Let dg be the Tamagawa measure on $G_1(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ determined by the gauge form $\nu_{G_1} = i_{\mathbf{v}}^* \nu$. Then

$$\text{vol}(K_p, dg) = \frac{|\alpha(\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e})|_p}{|\beta(\mathbf{w})|_p} |\Delta|_p^{\frac{1}{2}n(n-1)} \cdot \alpha_p(S, S),$$

where $\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e}$ is the $O_{\mathbf{k},p}$ -basis $v_i \otimes e_j$ for $L_p^n = L_p \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} \mathbb{Z}_p^n$, for the standard basis e_j of \mathbb{Z}^n .

(iii)

$$\frac{\text{vol}(K'_p, dg)}{\text{vol}(K_p, dg)} = \frac{|\det(S')|_p^n \alpha_p(S', S')}{|\det(S)|_p^n \alpha_p(S, S)} = p^{-n} \frac{1 - (-1)^{n+1} p^{-n-1}}{1 - p^{-2}}.$$

Proof. To prove (i), take $\mathbf{x} \in h^{-1}(S) \cap L_p^n$, and write $\mathbf{x} = g \cdot \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{v} \cdot a$, with $g \in G_1(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ and $a \in \text{GL}_n(\mathbf{k}_p) \cap M_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$. Let $L'_p \subset L_p$ be the $O_{\mathbf{k},p}$ -lattice spanned by the components of \mathbf{x} . Then $L'_p = g \cdot L_p$ and $|L_p : L'_p| = |N(\det a)|_p^{-1}$. But

$$S = (\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = (\mathbf{v}a, \mathbf{v}a) = {}^t a(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{v}) \bar{a} = {}^t a S \bar{a},$$

so that $N(\det a) = 1$ and $gL_p = L_p$, i.e., $g \in K_p$. Conversely, if $k \in K_p$, then $\mathbf{x} = k \cdot \mathbf{v} \in h^{-1}(S) \cap L_p^n$.

To prove (ii), note that by (i),

$$\text{vol}(K_p, dg) = O_{S,p}(\varphi_p),$$

where φ_p is the characteristic function of L_p^n . Thus,

$$\begin{aligned} \text{vol}(K_p, dg) &= C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi)^{-1} W_{S,p}(0, \varphi_p) \\ (10.4) \quad &= C_p(V, \alpha, \beta, \psi)^{-1} \gamma_p(V)^n |\det S|_p^n |\Delta|_p^e \alpha_p(S, S) \\ &= \frac{c_p(\alpha, \psi)}{c_p(\beta, \psi)} |\det S|_p^n |\Delta|_p^e \alpha_p(S, S). \end{aligned}$$

If \mathbf{v} is an \mathbb{Z}_p -basis for L_p , write $\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e}$ for the basis $v_i \otimes e_j$ for $L_p^n = L_p \otimes \mathbb{Z}^n$. Then

$$\text{vol}(L_p^n, d_{\alpha,p}x) = |\alpha(\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e})|_p = c_p(\alpha, \psi) |\det S|_p^n |\Delta|_p^{\frac{1}{2}n^2},$$

so that

$$c_p(\alpha, \psi) = |\alpha(\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e})|_p |\det S|_p^{-n} |\Delta|_p^{-\frac{1}{2}n^2}.$$

Similarly, if \mathbf{w} is a \mathbb{Z}_p -basis for $\text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$, then

$$\text{vol}(\text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p}), d_{\beta,p}b) = |\beta(\mathbf{w})|_p = c_p(\beta, \psi) |\Delta|_p^{\frac{1}{4}n(n-1)}.$$

Using these expressions in (10.4), we obtain (ii).

Finally, to prove (iii), we write $\mathbf{v}' = \mathbf{v} \cdot a$ for $a \in \text{GL}_n(\bar{\mathbf{k}}_p)$. Then

$$S' = {}^t_a S \bar{a},$$

and

$$\alpha(\mathbf{v}' \otimes \mathbf{e}) = \det(a)^n \alpha(\mathbf{v} \otimes \mathbf{e}).$$

Using these in the ratio of the expressions in (ii), we obtain (iii). \square

Part IV. Arithmetic intersection numbers

From now on, we restrict to the case of signature $(n-1, 1)$. Accordingly, we abbreviate $\mathcal{M}(n-1, 1)$ to $\mathcal{M}(n)$, and we write \mathcal{M} for the base change $\mathcal{M}(n) \times_{\text{Spec}(O_{\mathbf{k}})} \mathcal{M}_0$ of $\mathcal{M}(n)$ to \mathcal{M}_0 .

11. THE MAIN THEOREM AND A CONJECTURE

We first recall from the introduction the following definition.

Definition 11.1. A hermitian matrix $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ (and the corresponding special cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$) is called *non-degenerate* if $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is of pure dimension $n-m$.

In particular, in the special case $m=1$ any $T = t \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$ is non-degenerate.

The following proposition, which gives a partial characterization of non-degenerate $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$, follows from [48] and Proposition 6.3 above. Recall that for a nonsingular T in $\text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})$, $\text{Diff}_0(T)$ is the set of inert primes p such that $\text{ord}_p \det(T)$ is odd.

Proposition 11.2. For $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$, suppose that $\mathcal{Z}(T) \neq \emptyset$.

(i) Suppose that $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ for $p > 2$. Let $r^0(T) = n - \text{rank}(\text{red}(T))$ be the dimension of the radical of the hermitian form $\text{red}(T)$ over $O_{\mathbf{k}}/pO_{\mathbf{k}}$. Then $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is equidimensional of dimension

$$\dim \mathcal{Z}(T) = \left\lfloor \frac{r^0(T) - 1}{2} \right\rfloor.$$

In particular, T is non-degenerate if and only if T is $\text{GL}_n(O_{\mathbf{k},p})$ -equivalent to $\text{diag}(1_{n-2}, p^a, p^b)$ with $0 \leq a < b$.

(ii) Conversely, suppose that $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)_{>0}$ and that, for an odd unramified prime p , $\mathcal{Z}(T) \cap \mathcal{M}_p$ is a nonempty 0-cycle. Then T is non-degenerate with $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$.

Proof. By Proposition 2.23, the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is empty unless $|\text{Diff}_0(T)| \leq 1$. When $|\text{Diff}_0(T)| = 0$, then the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is supported in the fibers at ramified primes. Thus, under either of the hypotheses in (i) or (ii), it follows that p is an odd inert prime and that $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$. Moreover, by Remark 6.4, $\text{supp}(\mathcal{Z}(T))$ is contained in the component $\mathcal{M}_p^{\tilde{V}, \text{ss}}$, where $\tilde{V} \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ is locally isomorphic to V_T at all finite places away from p . Now the completion of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ along its supersingular locus breaks up into a disjoint sum (6.9) of $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$, where the pairs (V^\sharp, V_0) run over $\mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})^\sharp \times \mathcal{R}_{(1,0)}(\mathbf{k})$ such that $\text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V) \simeq \tilde{V}$. By Proposition 6.3, $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$ is the stack quotient of the formal scheme

$$(11.1) \quad \text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0) = \coprod_{(gK^{V^\sharp, p}, g_0K_0^p)} \coprod_{\mathbf{x}^o} \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o),$$

by the group $I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$. It is shown in [48] that $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o)$ is equidimensional of dimension $[(r^0(T) - 1)/2]$, and hence is a 0-cycle if and only if T is $\text{GL}_n(\mathcal{O}_{k,p})$ -equivalent to $\text{diag}(1_{n-2}, p^a, p^b)$ with $0 \leq a < b$. \square

Remark 11.3. To obtain a complete characterization of non-degenerate T 's of maximal size it would be necessary to determine what happens for ramified primes and for $p = 2$, e.g., to extend the results of [77], [79] and [48] to such primes.

For positive integers m_1, \dots, m_r with $\sum_{i=1}^r m_i = n$, we fix $T_i \in \text{Herm}_{m_i}(\mathcal{O}_k)$, with corresponding special cycles $\mathcal{Z}(T_i)$. The fiber product of these cycles over \mathcal{M} decomposes as

$$(11.2) \quad \mathcal{Z}(T_1) \times_{\mathcal{M}} \dots \times_{\mathcal{M}} \mathcal{Z}(T_r) = \coprod_T \mathcal{Z}(T),$$

where T runs over elements of $\text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)_{\geq 0}$ with diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r . The decomposition is according to the *fundamental matrix* which, to an S -valued point $(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_r)$ for a connected scheme S , attaches the matrix $T = h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$, where $\mathbf{x} = [\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_r]$. Here h' is the hermitian form (2.4) on $\text{Hom}_{\mathcal{O}_k}(E, A)$.

Definition 11.4. For $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_k)_{>0}$ with non-degenerate diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r , let

$$(11.3) \quad \langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T = \sum_p \chi(\mathcal{Z}(T)_p, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \dots \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)}) \log p.$$

Here $\mathcal{Z}(T)_p$ denotes the part of $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ with support in the fiber at p . Note that by Proposition 2.23, $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has proper support in the special fiber of at most finitely many primes p , so that the sum and the Euler-Poincaré characteristics appearing here are finite. Note that, since $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is a stack and not a scheme, we have to use here the ‘stacky’ definition of the Euler-Poincaré characteristic, cf. [17], VI 4.1.

Remark 11.5. Note that, if $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ is non-degenerate, then the diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r are automatically non-degenerate.

By Proposition 2.23, if $|\text{Diff}_0(T)| > 1$, the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is empty and the Euler-Poincaré characteristic is zero. On the other hand, if $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$, then $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is supported in the fiber over p of \mathcal{M} , and

$$(11.4) \quad \langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T = \chi(\mathcal{Z}(T), \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \dots \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)}) \log p.$$

Finally, if $\text{Diff}_0(T)$ is empty, then $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ is either empty or supported in the fibers for p ramified in \mathbf{k} , and the sum in (11.3) runs over such primes.

We expect that $\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T$ is the contribution of T to the arithmetic intersection number of the non-degenerate special cycles $\mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r)$.

Proposition 11.6. *Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ with diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r and assume that T is non-degenerate. Then*

$$\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \dots \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)} = \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes \dots \otimes \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)};$$

more precisely, $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_1)} \otimes \dots \otimes \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(T_r)}$ represents the left hand side in the derived category.

Proof. We use the p -adic uniformization, Proposition 6.3 of special cycles. We are then reduced to the corresponding statement concerning closed formal subschemes of $\mathcal{N} \simeq \mathcal{N} \times \mathcal{N}_0$: we are given

$$\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}_i) \subset \mathcal{N}, \quad \underline{\mathbf{x}}_i \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p}(\mathbb{X}_0, \mathbb{X})^{n_i},$$

for $i = 1, \dots, r$. By assumption $\cap_{i=1, \dots, r} \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}_i)$ is of dimension 0 (and in fact, by [48], Corollary 4.7 reduced to a single point ξ). But by Proposition 3.5 of [48], for any $x \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p}(\mathbb{X}_0, \mathbb{X})^{n_i}$, the formal subscheme $\mathcal{Z}(x)$ of \mathcal{N} is defined by a single equation. It follows that, denoting by x_i^j ($j = 1, \dots, n_i$) the components of $\underline{\mathbf{x}}_i$, each $\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)$ is a formal divisor in \mathcal{N} , and $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}_i)$ is the proper intersection of these divisors. Hence the local equations f_i^j ($j = 1, \dots, n_i$) of the divisors $\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)$ form a regular sequence in the regular local ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}, \xi}$. This implies that $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}_i)}$ represents the derived tensor product

$$\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(x_i^1)} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \dots \otimes^{\mathbb{L}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(x_i^{n_i})}.$$

Indeed, each $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)}$ is represented by the complex

$$[\mathcal{O} \xrightarrow{f_i^j} \mathcal{O}].$$

Hence the derived tensor product of all $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)}$ is represented by the Koszul complex [8] of the elements f_i^j ($j = 1, \dots, n_i$), which, since the f_i^j form a regular sequence, has as its only homology group the module $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(\underline{x}_i)}$.

Similarly, since all formal divisors $\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)$ ($i = 1, \dots, r; j = 1, \dots, n_i$) intersect properly, an analogous reasoning proves that all f_i^j form a regular sequence in $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}, \xi}$ and hence the derived tensor product of all $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)}$ is represented by the Koszul complex of the elements f_i^j , which has as its only homology group the module $\mathcal{O}_{\cap \mathcal{Z}(x_i^j)}$. \square

Corollary 11.7. *For a non-degenerate $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ with diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r ,*

$$\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T = \text{length}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) \cdot \log p =: \widehat{\deg}(\mathcal{Z}(T))$$

is the arithmetic degree of the 0-cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$. In particular, this quantity is independent of the choice of the sizes of the blocks T_i on the diagonal of T .

Note that the blocks T_i here are automatically nondegenerate, cf. Remark 11.5.

The proof of the following explicit formula for the length will be given in the next section.

Theorem 11.8. *Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ be non-degenerate with $\mathcal{Z}(T) \neq \emptyset$ and with $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ for some $p > 2$. Then*

$$\text{length}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) = \mu_p(T) \cdot \frac{h_{\mathbf{k}}}{w_{\mathbf{k}}} \cdot r_{\text{gen}}(T, V_T),$$

with

$$\mu_p(T) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{l=0}^a p^l (a + b + 1 - 2l),$$

where T is $\text{GL}_n(\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}, p})$ -equivalent to $\text{diag}(1_{n-2}, p^a, p^b)$ with $0 \leq a < b$. Also,

$$r_{\text{gen}}(T, V_T) = \sum_{[[\tilde{L}']]} r_{\text{gen}}(T, \tilde{L}'),$$

where $r_{\text{gen}}(T, \tilde{L}')$ is the number of representations of T by the $\text{U}(V_T)$ -genus of \tilde{L}' , a nearly self-dual lattice, in the sense of (12.6), in the hermitian space V_T of dimension n determined by T . In the sum, $[[\tilde{L}']]$ runs over the genera of nearly self-dual lattices in V_T , cf. Corollary 2.17.

Note that the factor $\frac{h_{\mathbf{k}}}{w_{\mathbf{k}}}$ is the degree of the stack $\mathcal{M}_0 = [O_{\mathbf{k}}^{\times} \backslash \operatorname{Spec} O_H]$ over $\operatorname{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}$.

We may now formulate our main result. Recall that for each $V^{\sharp} = (V, [[L]]) \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}$ there is an incoherent Eisenstein series defined by (9.1), where at $p = 2$ the self-dual lattice is taken to have the type given by V^{\sharp} . We now write $E(z, s, V^{\sharp}) = E(z, s, L)$ for this series, to emphasize the dependence on V^{\sharp} , and let

$$(11.5) \quad E(z, s, V) = \sum_{V^{\sharp}=(V, [[L]])} E(z, s, V^{\sharp}),$$

be the sum of these series over the G_1^V -genera of self-dual lattices $[[L]]$ in V , cf. Corollary 2.17. We also consider the Eisenstein series

$$E(z, s) = \sum_{V \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})^{\sharp}} E(z, s, V^{\sharp})$$

obtained by summing over all self-dual genera.

Theorem 11.9. *Let $T \in \operatorname{Herm}_n(O_{\mathbf{k}})_{>0}$ be non-degenerate with $\mathcal{Z}(T) \neq \emptyset$ and with $\operatorname{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ for some $p > 2$. Let V_T be the positive definite hermitian space of dimension n determined by the matrix T . Then*

$$E'_T(z, 0) = E'_T(z, 0, \tilde{V}) = C_1 \cdot \widehat{\deg}(\mathcal{Z}(T)) \cdot q^T,$$

where $\tilde{V} \in \mathcal{R}_{(n-1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ is the unique relevant hermitian space that is locally isomorphic to V_T at all primes other than ∞ and p , and $E(z, s, \tilde{V})$ is the corresponding incoherent Eisenstein series defined by (11.5). Here

$$C_1 = \frac{w_{\mathbf{k}}}{h_{\mathbf{k}}} \operatorname{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R})) \operatorname{vol}(K_1),$$

for $K_1 \subset U(\tilde{V})(\mathbb{A}_f)$ the stabilizer of a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice \tilde{L} in \tilde{V} and for the measure normalized as in sections 7 and 8.

Note that the factor $\operatorname{vol}(G'_1(\mathbb{R})) \operatorname{vol}(K_1)$ is a (stacky) Euler characteristic, as explained in Lemma 9.5.

Proof. This result is an immediate consequence of the formulas for the two sides given in Corollary 9.4 and Theorem 11.8 respectively. \square

Note that this identity can be rephrased as saying that, for T as in the theorem,

$$E'_T(z, 0, \tilde{V}) = C_1 \cdot \langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T q^T,$$

where T_1, \dots, T_r are diagonal blocks of T , as above.

We have the following conjecture.

Conjecture 11.10. *Let $T \in \text{Herm}_n(O_k)_{>0}$ with non-degenerate diagonal blocks T_1, \dots, T_r and assume that $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$ for $p > 2$. Suppose that $\mathcal{Z}(T) \neq \emptyset$. Let V_T , \tilde{V} , and $E(z, s, \tilde{V})$ be as in Theorem 11.9. Then*

$$E'_T(z, 0) = E'_T(z, 0, \tilde{V}) = C_1 \cdot \langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T \cdot q^T.$$

The point here is that, when the cycle $\mathcal{Z}(T)$ has positive dimension, there is no intrinsic definition of an arithmetic degree $\widehat{\deg} \mathcal{Z}(T)$. Instead, we assign to T as in Conjecture 11.10 the following quantity. Let $t_1, \dots, t_n \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$ be the diagonal entries of T . Then consider

$$(11.6) \quad \widehat{\deg} \mathcal{Z}(T) := \langle \mathcal{Z}(t_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(t_r) \rangle_T.$$

The conjecture includes the assertion that $\langle \mathcal{Z}(T_1), \dots, \mathcal{Z}(T_r) \rangle_T$ should always be equal to this quantity, no matter what ordered partition of n is used to divide T up into blocks, as long as the blocks T_1, \dots, T_r on the diagonal are non-degenerate. Also note that due to the invariance property of the Fourier coefficients $E'_T(z, 0, \Phi)$ under the action of $\text{GL}_n(O_k)$ coming from the transformation law, the conjecture also implies that the following invariance property of the arithmetic intersection numbers (11.6) should hold. If $T' = gT^t\bar{g}$ for some $g \in \text{GL}_n(O_k)$, then $\widehat{\deg} \mathcal{Z}(T) = \widehat{\deg} \mathcal{Z}(T')$. The picture is consistent with what is proved in [46] in the case of degenerate intersections of special divisors on Shimura curves and in [75] and [76] in the case of degenerate intersections of special divisors on Hilbert modular surfaces.

12. THE ARITHMETIC DEGREE IN THE NON-DEGENERATE CASE

In this section we prove Theorem 11.8. Recall that there is a decomposition

$$(12.1) \quad \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}(T) = \coprod_{(V^\sharp, V_0)} \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T).$$

We use the p -adic uniformization of the special cycle $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)$ given in Proposition 6.3. As in [48], we identify $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o)$ with a closed formal subscheme of \mathcal{N} . By Theorem 5.1 of [48], the length of $\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o)$ depends only on T and is equal to

$$(12.2) \quad \text{length}(\mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o)) = \mu_p(T) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{l=0}^a p^l (a + b + 1 - 2l).$$

Therefore, we have

$$(12.3) \quad \text{length}(\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^{(V^\sharp, V_0), \text{ss}}(T)) = \mu_p(T) \cdot |[(I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash \text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0)(\mathbb{F})]|,$$

where the second factor on the right side is the (stack) cardinality of the quotient.

Recall from Lemma 6.1, a) and Remark 6.4 that the hermitian space $\tilde{V}' = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}^0(E^o, A^o)$ is positive definite and has invariants $\text{inv}_p(\tilde{V}') = -\text{inv}_p(\tilde{V}) = -1$, and $\text{inv}_\ell(\tilde{V}') = \text{inv}_\ell(\tilde{V})$ for $\ell \neq p$, where we recall that $\tilde{V} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V)$. Let $G' = \text{GU}(\tilde{V}')$ and $G'_1 = \text{U}(\tilde{V}')$, and recall from Lemma 6.1, b) that $I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \simeq G'_1(\mathbb{Q})$ and $I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}) = \mathbf{k}^1$.

We also recall that, by Theorem 4.5 of [48],

$$(12.4) \quad \mathcal{Z}(\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o)(\mathbb{F}) = \mathcal{V}(\Lambda)(\mathbb{F}),$$

is a single point, where Λ is the unique vertex of level 0 and type 1 in⁸ V'_p such that Λ^* contains the components of $\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o$ and where $\mathcal{V}(\Lambda)$ is the stratum associated to Λ in \mathcal{N} . Recall here from [48] that a vertex of level j and type t is a lattice Λ in V'_p such that

$$p^j \Lambda^* \stackrel{t}{\subset} \Lambda \subset p^{j-1} \Lambda^*,$$

where⁹

$$\Lambda^* = \{x \in V'_p \mid (\Lambda, x) \subset O_{\mathbf{k},p}\},$$

and where the notation $p^j \Lambda^* \stackrel{t}{\subset} \Lambda$ means that $\Lambda/p^j \Lambda^* \simeq (O_{\mathbf{k}}/pO_{\mathbf{k}})^t$. Also note that, if $g \in G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ with $\text{ord}_p \nu(g) = r$, then $\nu(g)(g\Lambda)^* = g(\Lambda^*)$ and hence $g\Lambda$ has level $j+r$ and type t . In particular the group $G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)^0$ (the subgroup of elements with scale factor a p -adic unit) acts on the set of lattices of level 0 and type t . The following fact is easily checked, cf. [34], section 7.

Lemma 12.1. *Let \mathcal{L}_t be the set of lattices in V'_p of level 0 and type t . Then $G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)^0$ acts transitively on \mathcal{L}_t . \square*

We fix a lattice $\Lambda \in \mathcal{L}_1$ and let K'_p be its stabilizer in $G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)$. Note that $K'_p \subset G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)^0$.

Recall that K^p is the stabilizer of the $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p$ -lattice $\text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p}(T^p(E^o), T^p(A^o))$, where we write $K^p = K^{V^\sharp, p}$ to simplify the notation. Thus, we must compute the stack cardinality of the quotient of

$$(12.5) \quad \text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0)(\mathbb{F}) = \coprod_{(gK^p, g_0K_0^p)} \coprod_{g'_p K'_p \in G'(\mathbb{Q}_p)^0/K'_p} \coprod_{\mathbf{x}^o} \{\text{pt}\}$$

⁸Here we are rephrasing the result of [48] in terms of V'_p . Note that, by Lemma 3.9 in [48], the space $C, \{ \}$ coincides with the space $\mathbb{V} = V'_p$ but with the hermitian form scaled by p , i.e., $\{ \ , \} = p(\ , \)$. Since $\text{ord}_p \det C$ is 0 if n is odd and 1 if n is even, we have $\text{inv}_p(V') = -1$, as required.

⁹In [48], this relation is expressed in terms of

$$p^{-1} \Lambda^* = \Lambda^\vee = \{x \in C \mid \{\Lambda, x\} \subset O_{\mathbf{k},p}\}.$$

by the action of $G'_1(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$. Here, the last union runs over the set of $\mathbf{x}^o \in V'(\mathbb{Q})^n$ such that

- (i) $h'(\mathbf{x}^o, \mathbf{x}^o) = T$,
- (ii) $g^{-1} \circ \underline{\mathbf{x}}^o \circ g_0 \in (\text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p}(T^p(E^o), T^p(A^o)))^n$
- (iii) $\underline{\mathbf{x}}^o \in g'_p \Lambda^*$.

The combination of (6.2) and (6.7) determines an isometry $\tilde{V}(\mathbb{A}_f^p) \simeq \tilde{V}'(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$ compatible with the action of $I^V(\mathbb{Q})$ on both sides. Define a lattice \tilde{L}' in \tilde{V}' by taking $\tilde{L}'_p = \Lambda^*$ and

$$\tilde{L}' \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^p}(T^p(E^o), T^p(A^o)).$$

The stabilizer of $\tilde{L}' \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ in $G'(\mathbb{A}_f)$ is $K' = K'_p K'^p$, where $K'^p = K^p$ under the identification of $V(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$ with $V'(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$. Note that this lattice is nearly self-dual, i.e.,

$$(12.6) \quad (\tilde{L}')^* / \tilde{L}' \simeq O_{\mathbf{k}}/pO_{\mathbf{k}}.$$

Next observe that

$$\nu(K') = \nu(G'(\mathbb{A}_f)^0),$$

so that

$$G'(\mathbb{A}_f)^0 / K' \simeq G'_1(\mathbb{A}_f) / K'_1$$

for $K'_1 = K' \cap G'_1(\mathbb{A}_f)$. The cosets $g'K'_1$ in $G'_1(\mathbb{A}_f)/K'_1$ correspond to the lattices $\tilde{L}'' = g'\tilde{L}'$ in the G'_1 -genus of \tilde{L}' , via

$$\tilde{L}'' = V' \cap (g' \cdot (\tilde{L}' \otimes \widehat{\mathbb{Z}})).$$

For any such lattice, $\tilde{L}'' \subset V'$, corresponding to $g'K'_1$, we let

$$\Omega(T, \tilde{L}'') = \{ \mathbf{x} \in (\tilde{L}'')^n \mid h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T \}$$

and

$$\Gamma(\tilde{L}'') = G'_1(\mathbb{Q}) \cap g'K'_1(g')^{-1}.$$

Note that this is a finite group.

Observe that since the components of any $\mathbf{x} \in \Omega(T, \tilde{L}'')$ span V' , the stabilizer $\Gamma(\tilde{L}'')_{\mathbf{x}}$ is trivial. This implies that

$$[G'_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash \coprod_{gK^p} \coprod_{g'_p K'_p} \coprod_{\mathbf{x}^o} \{\text{pt}\}] = \coprod_{\tilde{L}''} \Gamma(\tilde{L}'') \backslash \Omega(T, \tilde{L}'')$$

as orbifold quotients. Thus

$$|[G'_1(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash \coprod_{gK^p} \coprod_{g'_p K'_p} \coprod_{\mathbf{x}^o} \{\text{pt}\}]| = \sum_{\tilde{L}''} |\Gamma(\tilde{L}'')|^{-1} |\Omega(T, \tilde{L}'')| = r_{\text{gen}}(T, \tilde{L}').$$

This is not yet the cardinality of the stack quotient of (12.5); we have to take into account the role of the cosets $g_0 K_0^p$ and the action of $I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})$. Here $g_0 K_0^p$

runs over $G^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)/K_0^p \simeq G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)/K_{0,1}^p$. For any $g_0 \in G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p) = \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}^1$, as the lattice \tilde{L}'' runs over a set of representatives for the G_1' -genus of \tilde{L}' , so does the lattice $\tilde{L}''g_0^{-1}$. Note that

$$\left| \left[I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_1^{V_0}(\mathbb{A}_f^p)/K_{0,1}^p \right] \right| = \frac{1}{w_{\mathbf{k}}} \cdot |\mathbf{k}^1 \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f^p}^1 / \widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^\times| = \frac{h_{\mathbf{k}}}{2^{\delta-1} w_{\mathbf{k}}}.$$

Thus, we obtain the following explicit formula for the stack cardinality.

Lemma 12.2.

$$\left| \left[(I^V(\mathbb{Q}) \times I^{V_0}(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash \text{Inc}_p(T; V^\sharp, V_0)(\mathbb{F}) \right] \right| = \frac{h_{\mathbf{k}}}{2^{\delta-1} w_{\mathbf{k}}} \cdot r_{\text{gen}}(T, \tilde{L}').$$

Note that the right side here depends only on $\tilde{V} \simeq \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(V_0, V)$ and the type of the genus of V^\sharp , so that each pair (V^\sharp, V_0) with V^\sharp of a given type occurring in the decomposition (12.1) makes the same contribution. Since the number of such pairs is $2^{\delta-1}$, this lemma, together with the formulas (12.2) and (12.3), proves Theorem 11.8.

Part V. Examples

13. LEVEL STRUCTURES

In this section we define variants of our moduli problem $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)$, and discuss how to extend our main results to these cases. These variants actually show up in the examples discussed in the following sections.

13.1. Special parahoric level structures at ramified primes. For every $p \mid \Delta$, we fix an *even* integer $t(p)$ with $0 \leq t(p) \leq n$ (the *type* of p). We denote by \mathbf{t} the function $p \mapsto t(p)$ on the set of divisors of Δ . We then introduce the following variant $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$ of the stack $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$ over $(\text{Sch}/\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}})$ of section 2. It parametrizes objects (A, ι, λ) as in the definition of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$, except that the condition that the polarization λ be principal is replaced by the following condition. We require that $\ker \lambda \subset A[\Delta]$, so that $O_{\mathbf{k}}/(\Delta)$ acts on $\ker \lambda$. In addition, we require that this action factors through the factor ring $\prod_{p \mid \Delta} \mathbb{F}_p$ of $O_{\mathbf{k}}/(\Delta)$, and that the height of $\ker \lambda$ be equal to $\prod_{p \mid \Delta} p^{t(p)}$. Note that if $\mathbf{t} = 0$, then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$ coincides with $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)^{\text{naive}}$. When \mathbf{k} and \mathbf{t} are understood, we simply write $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$ for this stack.

Then $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$ is a Deligne-Mumford stack over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$ which is smooth of relative dimension $(n-r)r$ over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$, provided it is

not empty (this may happen, see below). At the primes $p \mid \Delta$, the stack is not flat in general. We define $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^*$ to be the flat closure of $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}} \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\Delta^{-1}]$ in $\mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$.

Proposition 13.1. *Let $r = 1$ and assume $2 \nmid \Delta$.*

- (i) *If $\mathbf{t} = 0$, then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-1, 1)^* = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-1, 1)$.*
- (ii) *At all primes $p \mid \Delta$ with $t(p) = 0$, $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-1, 1)^*$ is Cohen-Macaulay, normal, and regular outside finitely many points. If $n \geq 3$, the special fibers at such primes p are irreducible, reduced, normal and with isolated rational singularities. If $n = 2$, then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-1, 1)^*$ has semi-stable, but non-smooth, reduction at such primes.*
- (iii) *If n is even, then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-1, 1)^*$ is smooth at all primes $p \mid \Delta$ with $t(p) = n$.*
- (iv) *If n is odd, then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-1, 1)^*$ is smooth at all primes $p \mid \Delta$ with $t(p) = n-1$.*

Proof. Statement (i) is Pappas' Proposition 2.6, which is [60], Theorem 4.5, and statement (ii) is also contained in loc. cit.; statement (iii) is [63], §5.c., and statement (iv) is [5], Prop. 4.16. \square

We extend the definition of the special cycles in the obvious way: for a hermitian matrix $T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})$, we define the Deligne-Mumford stack $\mathcal{Z}(T)^*$ equipped with a natural morphism to $\mathcal{M}^* = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r)^* \times \mathcal{M}_0$ as the stack that parametrizes collections $(A, \iota, \lambda; E, \iota_0, \lambda_0; \mathbf{x})$, where $\mathbf{x} = [x_1, \dots, x_m] \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E, A)^m$ is an m -tuple of homomorphisms such that $h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T$.

We expect that with these definitions all results of the previous sections can be transposed to these cases. Let us illustrate this by discussing the complex uniformization of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-r, r)^*$.

Definition 13.2. An $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module L equipped with a \mathbf{k} -valued hermitian form of signature $(n-r, r)$ is called¹⁰ of type \mathbf{t} if $L \subset L^\vee \subset \Delta^{-1}L$ and $L^\vee/L \simeq \prod_{p \mid \Delta} \mathbb{F}_p^{t(p)}$.

In particular, an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module of type $\mathbf{t} = 0$ is a self-dual hermitian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module. We note that for any $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module of type \mathbf{t} , the hermitian space $V = L \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is relevant. Indeed, to check the existence of a self-dual lattice in V , it suffices to check this locally at any inert prime p . But for such p a self-dual lattice in V_p is given by $L \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p = L^\vee \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p$. We also note that, if $2 \nmid \Delta$, lattices of

¹⁰ Hopefully, there will be no confusion between this notion of type and the type of a G_1^V -genus which occurs in earlier sections.

type \mathbf{t} always exist in a given relevant hermitian space V , except in the case when n is even and $t(p) = n$ for some $p \mid \Delta$ with $\text{inv}_p(V) = -1$. Indeed, this is a local question at primes p dividing Δ . Fix a self-dual lattice Λ in V_p . Then, up to conjugacy under the unitary group $\text{U}(V_p)$, the lattices L in V_p with $L \subset L^\vee \subset \pi^{-1}L$ such that $L^\vee/L \simeq \mathbb{F}_p^{t(p)}$ correspond to the totally isotropic subspaces of $\Lambda/\pi\Lambda$ of dimension $t(p)/2$ with respect to the non-degenerate symmetric form induced by the hermitian form. Such subspaces always exist except in the case when n is even and $t(p) = n$, in which case they exist if and only if $\text{inv}_p(V) = 1$.

Let $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t})$ be the set of isomorphism classes of hermitian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -modules of signature $(n-r, r)$ and type \mathbf{t} . Now the complex uniformization of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-r, r)^*$ is given by the following analogue of Proposition 3.1.

Proposition 13.3. *There is an isomorphism of orbifolds*

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n-r, r)^*(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_L [\Gamma_L \backslash D(L)],$$

where L runs over $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t})$. □

Remark 13.4. By our remarks above, the set $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t})$ is either empty or is in bijective correspondence with $\mathcal{L}_{(n-r,r)}(\mathbf{k})$, provided that $2 \nmid \Delta$.

13.2. Level structures at unramified primes. Now we discuss how to introduce level structures at unramified primes.

Definition 13.5. Let N be an odd positive integer prime to Δ . A *level N -structure* on an object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)(S)$ is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear isomorphism of finite group schemes

$$A[N] \xrightarrow{\sim} (O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})_S^n,$$

compatible with the hermitian form associated to the Riemann form corresponding to λ on the LHS and the standard hermitian form on the RHS, up to a scalar in $(\mathbb{Z}/N\mathbb{Z})^\times$.

Here the standard hermitian form h on $(O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})^n$ with values in $O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}}$ is given in terms of the canonical basis by $h(e_i, e_{n-j+1}) = \delta_{ij}, \forall i, j = 1, \dots, n$. It induces a similar form on the constant group scheme over S . Note that a level N -structure can only exist if N is invertible on S . The compatibility condition is independent of the choice of trivialization of the N -th roots of unity needed for the comparison with the standard form. We also note that if L is a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module, then L/NL is isomorphic to $(O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})^n$ with the standard form.

We obtain a Deligne-Mumford stack $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_{(N)}$ over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)[N^{-1}]$ which parametrizes collections $(A, \iota, \lambda, \eta)$ where η is a level N -structure. It

is smooth of relative dimension $(n-r)r$ over $\mathrm{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}[(N\Delta)^{-1}]$. Note that if $N \geq 3$, then, by Serre's Lemma, $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_{(N)}$ is a scheme.

Remark 13.6. A variant of the preceding definition arises by choosing a subgroup \bar{K} of $\mathrm{GU}((O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})^n)$, and defining a level \bar{K} -structure to be an isomorphism between $A[N]$ and $(O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})_S^n$, given modulo \bar{K} . In this way we obtain a Deligne-Mumford stack $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_{(N), \bar{K}}$ over $\mathrm{Spec} O_{\mathbf{k}}[N^{-1}]$. For instance, if \bar{K} is the subgroup preserving the standard flag spanned by e_1, e_2, \dots, e_n , then a level \bar{K} -structure corresponds to a complete flag of primitive $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -submodules in $A[N]$, which is self-dual for the Riemann form.

There are adelic variants of these definitions. Let $\mathbb{Q}_N = \prod_{\ell|N} \mathbb{Q}_{\ell}$ and $\mathbb{Z}_N = \prod_{\ell|N} \mathbb{Z}_{\ell}$. Then a $\Gamma(N)$ -level structure on an object (A, ι, λ) is a class of \mathbf{k} -linear isomorphisms which respect the hermitian forms up to a scalar in \mathbb{Q}_N^{\times} ,

$$\eta : T_N(A)^{\circ} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbf{k}^n \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N,$$

given modulo $\Gamma(N)$. Here $T_N(A)^{\circ} = \prod_{\ell|N} T_{\ell}(A)^{\circ}$ is the product of the rational Tate modules for $\ell | N$, and $\Gamma(N)$ denotes the principal congruence subgroup of level N of $\Gamma(1) = \mathrm{GU}(O_{\mathbf{k}}^n \otimes \mathbb{Z}_N)$. A level N -structure is equivalent to a $\Gamma(N)$ -level structure η such that $\eta(T_N(A)) = O_{\mathbf{k}}^n \otimes \mathbb{Z}_N$. More generally, if K is an open compact subgroup of $\mathrm{GU}(\mathbf{k}^n \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N)$, one defines the notion of a K -level structure as the datum of η as above, given modulo K . For a subgroup $\bar{K} \subset \mathrm{GU}((O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})^n)$, a level \bar{K} -structure is equivalent to giving a K -level structure η with $\eta(T_N(A)) = O_{\mathbf{k}}^n \otimes \mathbb{Z}_N$, where K is the inverse image of \bar{K} in $\Gamma(1)$.

The definition of our special cycles can now be extended as follows to the cases with level structures. Let $K_0 \subset \mathrm{GU}(\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N)$ and $K \subset \mathrm{GU}(\mathbf{k}^n \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N)$ be open compact subgroups, with associated moduli stacks $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 1, 0)_{K_0}$ and $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_K$. Let m be a positive integer, and fix a compact open subset

$$\omega \subset \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbf{k}}(\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N, \mathbf{k}^n \otimes \mathbb{Q}_N)^m$$

stable under the action of $K_0 \times K$. Then for $T \in \mathrm{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}}[N^{-1}])$, we define the stack $\mathcal{Z}(T, \omega)$ over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_K \times \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 1, 0)_{K_0}$ as parametrizing the collections $(A, \iota, \lambda, \eta, E, \iota_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0; \mathbf{x})$, where $\mathbf{x} \in (\mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E, A) \otimes O_{\mathbf{k}}[N^{-1}])^m$ satisfies the following two conditions

- (i) $h'(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = T$
- (ii) $\eta \circ \mathbf{x} \circ \eta_0^{-1} \in \omega$.

This definition is analogous to the definition of special cycles adopted in our previous papers [39, 45, 47]. Note that if K_0 and K are trivial, i.e., equal to $\Gamma(1)_0$ and $\Gamma(1)$ resp., so that $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)_K \times \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 1, 0)_{K_0} = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r) \times \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 1, 0)$, and if $\omega = \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(O_{\mathbf{k}} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_N, O_{\mathbf{k}}^n \otimes \mathbb{Z}_N)^m$ and

$T \in \text{Herm}_m(O_{\mathbf{k}})$, then the stack $\mathcal{Z}(T, \omega)$ is equal to the previously defined stack $\mathcal{Z}(T)$.

Remark 13.7. Of course, one may also mix the two kinds of level structures and define in this way stacks $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n - r, r)_K^*$ over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[N^{-1}]$, and corresponding special cycles.

We expect that the results of the previous sections can be extended to the moduli stacks $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n - r, r)_K^*$. For the analogues of Theorems 11.8 and 11.9, one has to assume that $\text{Diff}_0(T) = \{p\}$, where $p \nmid N$ is odd.

14. THE CASE $n = 2$

In this section, we illustrate our general results in the case $n = 2$. In particular, we explain the relation of our special cycles to the Heegner points defined in the classic paper of Gross and Zagier, [24].

Let \mathcal{E} be the moduli stack of elliptic curves over $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}$. For a scheme S , an object $E \in \mathcal{E}(S)$, and an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module M , we obtain an abelian scheme $M \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E$ over S by the Serre construction, [68]. Then $M \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E$ has a natural $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action, and the dual abelian scheme is given by

$$(M \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E)^{\vee} \simeq M^{\vee} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E^{\vee},$$

where $M^{\vee} = \text{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(M, \mathbb{Z})$ with its natural $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action. If we take a fractional ideal $M = \mathfrak{a}$, then the abelian scheme $\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E$ has relative dimension 2 over S and the $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action satisfies the $(1, 1)$ -signature condition

$$\text{char}(T, \iota(a) \mid \text{Lie } A) = T^2 - \text{tr}(a)T + N(a) \in \mathbb{Z}[T], \quad a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}.$$

Note that there is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -antilinear isomorphism

$$\partial^{-1} \mathfrak{a} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathfrak{a}^{\vee}, \quad a \mapsto N(\mathfrak{a})^{-1}(\cdot, a)_{\mathbf{k}},$$

where $(x, y)_{\mathbf{k}} = \text{tr}(xy^{\sigma})$ is the trace form of \mathbf{k}/\mathbb{Q} , and ∂^{-1} is the inverse different. The canonical principal polarization $\lambda_E : E \xrightarrow{\sim} E^{\vee}$ gives a polarization

$$\lambda : \mathfrak{a} \otimes E \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathfrak{a} \otimes E^{\vee} \longrightarrow \partial^{-1} \mathfrak{a} \otimes E^{\vee} \simeq \mathfrak{a}^{\vee} \otimes E^{\vee},$$

where middle arrow is induced by the inclusion $\mathfrak{a} \subset \partial^{-1} \mathfrak{a}$, and hence has degree $|\Delta|$. Thus, we obtain a functor

$$(14.1) \quad j_{\mathfrak{a}} : \mathcal{E} \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*, \quad E \mapsto (\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E, \iota, \lambda).$$

where $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*$ is a moduli stack that we now explain.

Let $\mathcal{M}(1, 1)^*$ be the moduli stack over $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}$ for triples $(A, \iota, \lambda)/S$, where A is an abelian scheme over S , ι is an action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on A satisfying the $(1, 1)$ -signature condition, and $\lambda : A \longrightarrow A^{\vee}$ is a polarization with corresponding Rosati involution satisfying $\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^{\sigma})$. Finally, we require that $\ker(\lambda) =$

$A[\partial]$. If $\Delta = N(\partial)$ is odd, this moduli problem was introduced in the previous section, and corresponds to the function $\mathbf{t}(p) = 2$, for all $p \mid \Delta$. Since the polarization λ is principal away from Δ , there is a decomposition

$$\mathcal{M}(1, 1)^* = \coprod_V \mathcal{M}^V(1, 1)^*,$$

where V runs over isomorphism classes $\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ of relevant hermitian spaces. These can be described as follows. For a quaternion algebra B/\mathbb{Q} with an embedding $\mathbf{k} \rightarrow B$, write $B = \mathbf{k} \oplus B_-$, where B_- is the set of $b \in B$ such that $ba = a^\sigma b$ for all $a \in \mathbf{k}$. The space $V = V^B = B$, viewed as a left vector space over \mathbf{k} , has a hermitian form $(x, y) = (xy^t)_+$, where $b \mapsto b^t$ is the main involution of B , and where for $x \in B$, we denote by $x_+ \in \mathbf{k}$ its component in the above direct sum decomposition. Let $D(B)$ be the product of the primes p for which $B \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{Q}_p$ is a division algebra.

Lemma 14.1.

$$\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k}) = \{ [V^B] \mid B \text{ indefinite, } D(B) \mid \Delta \}.$$

□

Note that the quaternion algebra $M_2(\mathbb{Q})$ always occurs here and that $V^{\text{spl}} := V^{M_2(\mathbb{Q})}$ is the split hermitian space. We write

$$\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^* = \mathcal{M}^{V^{\text{spl}}}(1, 1)^*.$$

When $2 \mid \Delta$ and we work over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\frac{1}{2}]$, the ‘type’ of the hermitian form on the 2-adic Tate module $T_2(A)$ gives a finer decomposition. Let π be a uniformizer of $O_{\mathbf{k},2}$, and note that $T_2(A)$ is then a π^i -modular lattice for $i = \text{ord}_2(\Delta)$, in the sense of the lemma below. When 2 is ramified, the isometry types of such lattices are given as follows.

Lemma 14.2. *Let L be an $O_{\mathbf{k},2}$ -lattice of rank 2 that is π^i -modular, i.e., $L^\vee = \pi^{-i}L$ as lattices in $V_2 = L \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_2} \mathbb{Q}_2$, where $i = \text{ord}_2(\Delta)$.*

(a) *Suppose that V_2 is isotropic. Then representatives for the isometry types of π^i -modular lattices are given by*

$$2 \begin{pmatrix} & 1 \\ 1 & \end{pmatrix}, \quad 2 \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

for $i = 2$, and

$$2 \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \pi \\ \pi^\sigma & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad 2 \begin{pmatrix} 2 & \pi \\ \pi^\sigma & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

for $i = 3$.

(b) *Suppose that V_2 is anisotropic. Then representatives for the isometry types of π^i -modular lattices are given by*

$$2 \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & -1 \end{pmatrix},$$

for $i = 2$, and

$$2 \begin{pmatrix} 2 & \pi \\ \pi^\sigma & 4 \end{pmatrix},$$

for $i = 3$.

Remark 14.3. We will refer to the first of the two lattices in each line of the lists in case (a) as ‘type II’ lattices.

It is easily checked that, for $p \mid \Delta$ with $p \neq 2$, and π_p a uniformizer of $O_{\mathbf{k},p}$, there is a unique isometry class of π_p -modular hermitian lattices of rank 2.

We denote by $\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k})^*$ the isomorphism classes of pairs $V^* = (V, [[L]])$, where V is a relevant hermitian space and $[[L]]$ is a $G_1^V(\mathbb{A}_f)$ -genus of ∂ -modular lattices in V . By the previous lemma, the map from $\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k})^*$ to $\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k})$ has fibers of cardinality 1 or 2. The latter occurs precisely when $2 \mid \Delta$ and for those $V = V^B$ where B is split at 2.

Then there is a decomposition

$$\mathcal{M}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}] = \coprod_{V^*} \mathcal{M}^{V^*}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}],$$

where V^* runs over $\mathcal{R}_{(1,1)}(\mathbf{k})^*$. Here $\mathcal{M}^{V^*}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}]$ is the open and closed substack where the 2-adic Tate module is of the type determined by V^* .

Proposition 14.4. (i) *The morphism $j_{\mathbf{a}}$ of (14.1) has image contained in $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1,1)^*$.*

(ii) *If $2 \nmid \Delta$, the morphisms $j_{\mathbf{a}}$ induce an isomorphism*

$$\coprod_{[\mathbf{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} j_{\mathbf{a}} : \coprod_{[\mathbf{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} \mathcal{E} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1,1)^*.$$

(iii) *If $2 \mid \Delta$, then, over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\frac{1}{2}]$, the morphisms $j_{\mathbf{a}}$ induce an isomorphism*

$$\coprod_{[\mathbf{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} j_{\mathbf{a}} : \coprod_{[\mathbf{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} \mathcal{E}[\frac{1}{2}] \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}, \text{II}}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}].$$

where $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}, \text{II}}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}]$ denotes the locus in $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1,1)^*[\frac{1}{2}]$ where the 2-adic Tate module has type II.

Proof. Part (i) follows from the fact that for the rational Tate module we have $T^p(\mathbf{a} \otimes E)^0 \simeq \mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} T^p(E)^o \simeq M_2(\mathbb{A}_f^p)$.

(ii) Each morphism $j_{\mathbf{a}}$ is proper, as one checks easily using the valuative criterion for properness. Also, $j_{\mathbf{a}}$ is a bijective map onto its image, in the stack sense. Indeed, for a pair E, E' of elliptic curves over a base scheme S , any isomorphism $\mathbf{a} \otimes E \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbf{a} \otimes E'$ induces an isomorphism $E \xrightarrow{\sim} E'$, after choosing a \mathbb{Z} -basis of \mathbf{a} , which allows us to identify $\mathbf{a} \otimes E$ with $E \times E$,

and $\mathfrak{a} \otimes E'$ with $E' \times E'$. By Proposition 13.1, (iii), the stack $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*$ is regular; hence we may apply Zariski's Main theorem, and the morphism $j_{\mathfrak{a}}$ induces an isomorphism of \mathcal{E} with a union of connected components of $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*$.

When $2 \mid \Delta$, over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[\frac{1}{2}]$, a simple calculation of the hermitian form on $T_2(j_{\mathfrak{a}}(E)) \simeq \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} T_2(E)$ shows that this hermitian lattice has type II and hence the image of $j_{\mathfrak{a}}(\mathcal{E}[\frac{1}{2}])$ lies in $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl, II}}(1, 1)^*[\frac{1}{2}]$.

Since \mathcal{E} is connected, to prove the isomorphism in (ii), it suffices to prove that $\pi_0(\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*) \simeq C(\mathbf{k})$, or also, since $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*$ is regular, that $\pi_0(\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*) \simeq C(\mathbf{k})$. This follows from Proposition 4.4 and (4.5), where we note that $\nu(K) = \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$ and that the image of K in first factor of $T(\mathbb{A}_f) \simeq \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^1 \times \mathbb{Q}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^{\times}$ is the image U of $\widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^{\times}$ under the map $u \mapsto u\bar{u}^{-1}$. Also note that this last map induces an isomorphism $C(\mathbf{k}) = \mathbf{k}^{\times} \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^{\times} / \widehat{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^{\times} \simeq \mathbf{k}^1 \backslash \mathbf{k}_{\mathbb{A}_f}^1 / U$.

The proof of (iii) is similar and omitted. \square

Now we turn to the special cycles. To lighten notation, we now denote by \mathcal{E} (resp. $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*$) the base change from $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}$ to $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$, and write

$$\mathcal{M}^* = \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^* \times \mathcal{M}_0,$$

where the fiber product is taken over $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}$. For a positive integer m , we define the special cycle

$$\mathcal{Z}^*(m) \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}^*$$

as the stack of collections $(A, \iota, \lambda, E_0, \iota_0, \lambda_0; x)$ where (A, ι, λ) is a object of $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*(S)$, $(E_0, \iota_0, \lambda_0)$ is an object of $\mathcal{M}_0(S)$, and

$$x \in \text{Hom}_S((E_0, \iota_0), (A, \iota)) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$$

is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear quasi-homomorphism such that

$$x^* = \lambda_0^{-1} \circ x^{\vee} \circ \lambda \in \text{Hom}_S((A, \iota), (E_0, \iota_0))$$

is a homomorphism¹¹ with $h(x, x) = x^* \circ x = \lambda_0^{-1} \circ x^{\vee} \circ \lambda \circ x = m$.

We want to determine the pullback of $\mathcal{Z}^*(m)$ under $j_{\mathfrak{a}} \times 1$, i.e., the fiber product

$$\begin{array}{ccc} (j_{\mathfrak{a}} \times 1)^* \mathcal{Z}^*(m) & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{Z}^*(m) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathcal{E} \times \mathcal{M}_0 & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{M}^*. \end{array}$$

Let $\mathcal{T}(m)$ be the stack for which the objects of $\mathcal{T}(m)(S)$ are triples (E, E', ψ) , where E and E' are elliptic schemes over S and $\psi : E \rightarrow E'$ is an m -isogeny.

¹¹In the case of a principal polarization, the integrality of x^* is equivalent to the integrality of x . In general, x need not be integral, so that we are slightly extending the earlier definition of section 13.

Let $s : \mathcal{T}(m) \rightarrow \mathcal{E}$ (resp. $t : \mathcal{T}(m) \rightarrow \mathcal{E}$) be the morphism defined by sending (E, E', ψ) to E (resp. E'). Consider the fiber product

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathcal{T}(m)_{\Delta, \mathfrak{a}} & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{T}(m) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow (s, t) \\ \mathcal{E} \times \mathcal{M}_0 & \xrightarrow{1 \times i_{\mathfrak{a}}} & \mathcal{E} \times \mathcal{E}. \end{array}$$

where $i_0 : \mathcal{M}_0 \rightarrow \mathcal{E}$ is the morphism that sends (E_0, ι_0) to E_0 and $i_{\mathfrak{a}} = i_0 \circ t_{\mathfrak{a}}$ where $t_{\mathfrak{a}} : \mathcal{M}_0 \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_0$ sends E_0 to $\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0$.

Proposition 14.5. *There is a natural isomorphism*

$$(j_{\mathfrak{a}} \times 1)^* \mathcal{Z}^*(m) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{T}(m)_{\Delta, \mathfrak{a}}$$

over $\mathcal{E} \times \mathcal{M}_0$.

Proof. An object of $(j_{\mathfrak{a}} \times 1)^* \mathcal{Z}^*(m)(S)$ is a collection $(E, E_0, \iota_0, \lambda_0; x)$ where $x : E_0 \rightarrow \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E$ is an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear quasi-homomorphism with x^* integral and with $h(x, x) = x^* \circ x = m$. Here $x^* = \lambda_0^{-1} \circ x^{\vee} \circ \lambda : \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E \rightarrow E_0$. Let $x_0^* : E \rightarrow \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0$ be the image of x^* under the natural isomorphism

$$(14.2) \quad \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E, E_0) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(E, \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)$$

arising from the Serre construction. On the other hand, an object of $\mathcal{T}(m)_{\Delta, \mathfrak{a}}(S)$ is a collection $(E, E_0, \iota_0, \lambda_0; y_0)$ where $y_0 : E \rightarrow \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0$ is an isogeny of degree m . The proposition is then an immediate consequence of the following result.

Lemma 14.6. *If $y \in \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E, E_0)$ and $y_0 \in \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(E, \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)$ correspond under (14.2), then $h(y, y) = y \circ y^* = \deg(y_0)$.*

Proof. For an isogeny $y_0 \in \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(E, \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)$, the corresponding $y \in \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E, E_0)$ is given by

$$(14.3) \quad y : \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E \xrightarrow{1 \otimes y_0} \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} (\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0) \longrightarrow E_0,$$

where the second map arises by multiplication $a \otimes (b \otimes x) \mapsto ab \cdot x$. To compute the desired relation between $\deg y_0$ and $h(y, y) = y \circ y^*$, we can pass to the rational Tate modules at a prime ℓ different from the characteristic. On the rational Tate modules $V_{\ell}(E)$, $V_{\ell}(\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)$ and $V_{\ell}(E_0)$, there are nondegenerate \mathbb{Q}_{ℓ} -valued alternating forms e_E , $e_{\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0}$, and e_{E_0} induced by the canonical principal polarizations and a fixed trivialization $\mathbb{Q}_{\ell}(1) \simeq \mathbb{Q}_{\ell}$. The pullback of $e_{\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0}$ under the isomorphism

$$y_{0, \ell} : V_{\ell}(E) \xrightarrow{\sim} V_{\ell}(\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)$$

is $\deg(y_0) \cdot e_E$, while the pullback of e_{E_0} under the isomorphism

$$i_{\mathfrak{a}, \ell} : V_{\ell}(\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0) \simeq \mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbf{k}} V_{\ell}(E_0) \simeq V_{\ell}(E_0)$$

is $N(\mathfrak{a})^{-1} \cdot e_{\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0}$. Similarly, setting $A = \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E$, the non-degenerate \mathbb{Q}_ℓ -valued alternating pairing on $V_\ell(A) = V_\ell(\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} E) \simeq \mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} V_\ell(E)$ determined by the polarization $\lambda = \lambda_A$ is given by

$$e_A(a \otimes z, a' \otimes z') = N(\mathfrak{a})^{-1} (a, a')_{\mathbf{k}} e_E(z, z').$$

From (14.3), we have

$$(14.4) \quad y_\ell : \mathbf{k} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} V_\ell(E) \xrightarrow{(\star)} V_\ell(E_0) \oplus \overline{V_\ell(E_0)} \longrightarrow V_\ell(E_0),$$

$$a \otimes z \mapsto (a \cdot i_{\mathfrak{a}, \ell} \circ y_{0, \ell}(z), \bar{a} \cdot i_{\mathfrak{a}, \ell} \circ y_{0, \ell}(z)) \mapsto a \cdot i_{\mathfrak{a}, \ell} \circ y_{0, \ell}(z).$$

A short calculation shows that the pullback of the diagonal form $e_{E_0} \oplus e_{E_0}$ on the middle term under the isomorphism (\star) is $\deg y_0 \cdot e_A$. If we identify $V_\ell(A)$ and $V_\ell(E_0) \oplus \overline{V_\ell(E_0)}$ via (\star) , then $y_\ell^* = \deg y_0 \cdot \text{inc}_1$, where inc_1 is the inclusion of $V_\ell(E_0)$ into the first factor and the adjoint y_ℓ^* is defined with respect to e_A . Hence $y \circ y^*$ is multiplication by $\deg y_0$ and the lemma is proved. \square

This completes the proof of Proposition 14.5. \square

For comparison with the classical theory, we add a little more level. We fix a positive integer N and work over $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}[N^{-1}]$. Let $\mathcal{E}_0(N)$ be the moduli stack over $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}[N^{-1}]$ for pairs of elliptic curves (E, E', ϕ) with a cyclic N -isogeny ϕ . Again applying the Serre construction, we obtain a morphism

$$j_{\mathfrak{a}, N} : \mathcal{E}_0(N) \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)_0^*(N),$$

where $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)_0^*(N)$ is the following moduli stack. For a locally noetherian base S , an object in $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)_0^*(N)(S)$ is a collection $(\xi, \xi'; \phi)$ where $\xi = (A, \iota_A, \lambda_A)$ and $\xi' = (A', \iota_{A'}, \lambda_{A'})$ are objects in $\mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)^*(S)$, and $\phi : A \rightarrow A'$ is an isogeny such that locally in the fppf topology, $\ker(\phi) \simeq (O_{\mathbf{k}}/NO_{\mathbf{k}})_S$.

As before we tacitly effect a base change from $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z}[N^{-1}]$ to $\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}[N^{-1}]$, and write

$$\mathcal{M}^{**} = \mathcal{M}^{\text{spl}}(1, 1)_0^*(N) \times \mathcal{M}_0.$$

We define the special cycle $\mathcal{Z}^{**}(m) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}^{**}$ as the stack of collections $(\xi, \xi', \phi; E_0, \iota_0, \lambda_0; x)$, where $x : E_0 \rightarrow A$ is a quasi-homomorphism with x^* integral, etc. just as before, but with the additional requirement that, fppf locally, $x^*(\ker(\phi))$ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/N\mathbb{Z})_S$.

To describe the pullback $(j_{\mathfrak{a}, N} \times 1)^*(\mathcal{Z}^{**}(m))$ over $\mathcal{E}_0(N) \times \mathcal{M}_0$, let $\mathcal{T}(m)_0(N)$ be the stack whose objects over S are collections (E, E', ϕ, E'', ψ) , where (E, E', ϕ) is an object of $\mathcal{E}_0(N)$ and $\psi : E \rightarrow E''$ is an isogeny of degree m such that the intersection $\ker(\psi) \cap \ker(\phi)$ is trivial. There are again source and target morphisms to $\mathcal{E}_0(N)$, where the target is the object $(E'', E''/\psi(\ker \phi), \phi')$ with ϕ' the quotient map.

Finally, as in [24], we make the assumption that all primes dividing N split in \mathbf{k} and choose an integral ideal \mathbf{n} with $N(\mathbf{n}) = N$. There is a resulting morphism

$$i_{0,\mathbf{n}} : \mathcal{M}_0 \longrightarrow \mathcal{E}_0(N), \quad E_0 \mapsto (E_0 \xrightarrow{\phi} E_0/E_0[\mathbf{n}]),$$

and its twist $i_{\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}} = i_{0,\mathbf{n}} \circ t_{\mathbf{a}}$.

Proposition 14.7. *There is a natural isomorphism*

$$(j_{\mathbf{a},N} \times 1)^*(\mathcal{Z}^{**}(m)) \xrightarrow{\sim} \coprod_{\mathbf{n}} \mathcal{T}(m)_0(N)_{\Delta,\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}},$$

over $\mathcal{E}_0(N) \times \mathcal{M}_0$, where

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathcal{T}(m)_0(N)_{\Delta,\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}} & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{T}(m)_0(N) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow (s,t) \\ \mathcal{E}_0(N) \times \mathcal{M}_0 & \xrightarrow{1 \times i_{\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}}} & \mathcal{E}_0(N) \times \mathcal{E}_0(N), \end{array}$$

is the fiber product. □

This proposition can be interpreted as follows. First suppose that $m = 1$. Then, over a base S on which N is invertible, an object of $\mathcal{T}(1)_0(N)_{\Delta,\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}}(S)$ is a collection $(E \xrightarrow{\phi} E', E_0, \psi)$, where $(E \xrightarrow{\phi} E')$ is an object of $\mathcal{E}_0(N)(S)$ and ψ is an isomorphism

$$(E \xrightarrow{\phi} E') \xrightarrow{\sim} (\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0 \longrightarrow \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0 / (\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)[\mathbf{n}]).$$

Hence, $\mathcal{T}(1)_0(N)_{\Delta,\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}}$ can be viewed as the graph of the morphism of stacks

$$\begin{aligned} i_{\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}} : \mathcal{M}_0 &\longrightarrow \mathcal{E}_0(N), \\ E_0 &\mapsto (\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0 \longrightarrow \mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0 / (\mathfrak{a}^{-1} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} E_0)[\mathbf{n}]) \end{aligned}$$

Passing to the coarse moduli schemes, for each \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{n} , we have a morphism

$$i_{\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}} : \mathrm{Spec}(O_H[N^{-1}]) \longrightarrow \underline{\mathcal{E}_0(N)}$$

where O_H is the ring of integers in H , the Hilbert class field of \mathbf{k} . Finally, passing to the generic fiber, we recover the Heegner points in $X_0(N)(H)$ as in [24], p.227. There are $2^s h_{\mathbf{k}}$ of them as \mathbf{a} varies over $C(\mathbf{k})$ and \mathbf{n} varies over the ‘primitive’ ideals of norm N . Similarly, for any $m \geq 1$, this construction, starting from $\mathcal{T}(m)_0(N)_{\Delta,\mathbf{a},\mathbf{n}}$, yields the image of the Heegner points under the m th Hecke operator.

So far we have discussed the case $B = M_2(\mathbb{Q})$. Now suppose that B is an indefinite division quaternion algebra with a maximal order O_B and with $D(B) \mid |\Delta|$. Fix an embedding $O_{\mathbf{k}} \rightarrow O_B$. Let \mathcal{M}^B be the Drinfeld stack over $\mathrm{Spec} \mathbb{Z}$ parametrizing two dimensional abelian schemes with a special O_B -action, cf. [9]. Choose an element $\xi \in O_B$ with $\xi^2 = -D(B)$, [9], and define the involution $b \mapsto b' := \xi b' \xi^{-1}$ where $b \mapsto b'$ is the main involution

of B . Given an object (A, ι_B) of $\mathcal{M}^B(S)$, there is a unique principal polarization λ_A of A for which the Rosati involution induces the involution $'$ on O_B , [9], Prop. (3.3), p.134. Since the element $\sqrt{\Delta}\xi^{-1} \in O_B$ is invariant under $'$, the composition $\lambda := \lambda_A \circ \iota_B(\sqrt{\Delta}\xi^{-1})$ is a polarization of A whose Rosati involution $*$ satisfies $\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma)$ for all $a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}$. Here we have written ι for the restriction of ι_B to $O_{\mathbf{k}}$. Then the collection (A, ι, λ) is an object of the moduli space $\mathcal{M}(1, 1)_{D(B)}^*$ which parametrizes two dimensional abelian schemes with $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action of signature $(1, 1)$ and polarization λ of degree $|\Delta|/D(B)$. If Δ is odd, $\mathcal{M}(1, 1)_{D(B)}^*$ coincides with the moduli problem $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$ defined in the previous section where

$$t(p) = \begin{cases} 2 & \text{if } p \mid \Delta, p \nmid D(B), \\ 0 & \text{if } p \mid \Delta, p \mid D(B). \end{cases}$$

Thus we obtain a morphism $j^B : \mathcal{M}^B \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(1, 1)_{D(B)}^*$ and twists

$$j_{\mathfrak{a}}^B : \mathcal{M}^B \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(1, 1)_{D(B)}^*, \quad j_{\mathfrak{a}}^B = \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} j^B,$$

for any fractional ideal \mathfrak{a} . When Δ is odd, these give an isomorphism

$$(14.5) \quad \coprod_{[\mathfrak{a}] \in C(\mathbf{k})} \mathcal{M}^B \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{M}^V(1, 1)_{D(B)}^*,$$

where $V = V^B$, generalizing that in (ii) of Proposition 14.4 where $B = M_2(\mathbb{Q})$. As in the case of a split quaternion algebra, we can now pull back $\mathcal{Z}^*(m)$ to $\mathcal{M}^B \times \mathcal{M}_0$, via $j_{\mathfrak{a}}^B \times 1$. This parametrizes tuples $(A, \iota_B, E_0, \iota_0, x)$ where $x \in \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E_0, \mathfrak{a} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} A) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is such that x^* is integral with $x^* \circ x = m$. Of course, here the adjoint x^* is formed using the canonical polarization λ of $\mathfrak{a} \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} A$ constructed above. And we may add level structures as in the case of the split quaternion algebra.

We end this section by explaining the relations among the $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$ for varying \mathbf{t} .

Proposition 14.8. *Suppose that \mathbf{t} is given and that $t(p) = 0$ for some prime $p \neq 2$ with $p \mid \Delta$. Define \mathbf{t}' by $t'(p') = t(p')$ for $p \neq p'$ and $t'(p) = 2$. Then there exists an étale Galois covering of degree 2*

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,p} \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*,$$

equipped with a proper morphism

$$\varphi : \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,p} \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*,$$

which is finite of degree $p+1$ outside the fibers over p and which contracts some lines in the special fiber of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{,p}$ at p , (cf. Remark 14.9 below).*

Proof. Let $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,p}$ be the stack of objects $\xi = (A, \iota_A, \lambda_A)$ of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$, together with an abelian scheme A' with $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action of signature $(1, 1)$ and a

O_k -linear isogeny $\mu : A' \longrightarrow A$ of degree p such that the pullback polarization $\lambda_{A'} = \mu^*(\lambda_A)$ has kernel contained in $A'[\sqrt{\Delta}]$. The morphism φ maps an object $(A, \iota_A, \lambda_A, \mu)$ to $(A', \iota_{A'}, \lambda_{A'})$ and is obviously proper. Let us determine the fiber of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,p}$ over a geometric point $\xi = (A, \iota_A, \lambda_A) \in \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*(k)$. If $\text{char } k \neq p$, then $\mu : A' \longrightarrow A$ is given by the p -adic Tate module of A' which is an O_{k_p} -stable submodule Λ of $T_p(A)$ such that $\Lambda \subset T_p(A) \subset \Lambda^\vee = \pi^{-1}\Lambda$, where π is a uniformizer in k_p . However, the hermitian form h_A on $T_p(A)$ arising from the polarization λ_A induces a non-degenerate \mathbb{F}_p -valued *symmetric* form on $\pi^{-1}T_p(A)/T_p(A)$. The set of Λ as above corresponds in a one-to-one way to the set of isotropic lines in this two-dimensional \mathbb{F}_p -vector space, via $\Lambda \mapsto \Lambda^\vee/T_p(A)$. Since $p \neq 2$, there are precisely two such lines. If $\text{char } k = p$, we use Dieudonné modules instead of Tate modules. The Dieudonné module of A is a module M over $O_{k_p} \otimes W(k)$, and $\pi^{-1}M/M$ is equipped with a non-degenerate k -valued symmetric form. Then $\mu : A' \longrightarrow A$ is given by the Dieudonné module Λ of A' which is a $O_{k_p} \otimes W(k)$ -submodule with $\Lambda \subset M \subset \Lambda^\vee = \pi^{-1}\Lambda$. Just as before Λ corresponds to one of the two isotropic lines in $\pi^{-1}M/M$.

Now let us determine the fiber of φ over a geometric point $(A', \iota_{A'}, \lambda_{A'}) \in \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*(k)$. If $\text{char } k \neq p$, then the points in the fiber correspond to the O_{k_p} -lattices L in the rational Tate module $V_p(A')$ with $T_p(A') \subsetneq L \subsetneq T_p(A')^\vee = \pi^{-1}T_p(A')$ (these are automatically self-dual). Hence there are $p+1$ of them. If $\text{char } k = p$, then the points in the fiber correspond to O_{k_p} -stable Dieudonné lattices M in the rational Dieudonné module of A' , containing the Dieudonné module $M(A')$ of A' , with $M(A') \subsetneq M \subsetneq M(A')^\vee = \pi^{-1}M(A')$. Now there are two cases. First suppose that $F(\pi^{-1}M(A')) \neq M(A')$, or equivalently, $V(\pi^{-1}M(A')) \neq M(A')$. Then either $F(\pi^{-1}M(A')) \subset M$, or $V(\pi^{-1}M(A')) \subset M$, and M is uniquely determined as $M = M(A') + F(\pi^{-1}M(A'))$ or $M = M(A') + V(\pi^{-1}M(A'))$, respectively. Hence in this case there is a unique point in the fiber. Next suppose that $F(\pi^{-1}M(A')) = M(A') = V(\pi^{-1}M(A'))$. Then there are no constraints on M and M corresponds to an arbitrary point in the projective line $\mathbb{P}(\pi^{-1}M(A')/M(A'))$.

Remark 14.9. Note that the points $\xi \in \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*(k)$ with a fiber of positive dimension have a Dieudonné module $M(A')$ satisfying $F(\pi^{-1}M(A')) = M(A') = V(\pi^{-1}M(A'))$. Let ξ lie in the component $\mathcal{M}^V(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*(k)$. Then this condition signifies that ξ is supersingular if $\text{inv}_p(V_p) = 1$ (resp. is superspecial in the sense of Drinfeld if $\text{inv}_p(V_p) = -1$).

By Proposition 13.1, $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$ and $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'; 1, 1)^*$ are regular; then by EGA IV, 18.10.16, $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,p} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$ is an étale Galois covering; furthermore, φ is the composition of a blow-up morphism and a finite morphism. \square

More generally, for given \mathbf{t} , let $S \subset \{p \mid p \neq 2, p \mid \Delta, t(p) = 0\}$, and define \mathbf{t}'_S by $t'_S(p) = t(p)$ for $p \notin S$ and $t'_S(p) = 2$ for $p \in S$. Then there exists an étale Galois covering $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,S}$ of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^*$ with Galois group $(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^S$ and a morphism

$$\varphi_S : \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,S} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}'_S; 1, 1)^*,$$

which is finite over $\text{Spec } \mathbb{Z} \setminus S$, and contracts lines in the fibers of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{t}; 1, 1)^{*,S}$ over primes $p \in S$.

15. IMAGES OF PERIOD MAPS

Our aim in this section is to connect some of the "hidden" period maps of [1, 2, 54, 55, 56, 57] to our moduli spaces and identify the complements of their images with our special divisors. Most of this theory is taking place over \mathbb{C} ; in order to make this section more accessible for complex-algebraic geometers, we have repeated here some of the theory and notation of the previous sections.

15.1. Moduli spaces of Picard type. Let $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{\Delta})$ be an imaginary-quadratic field with discriminant Δ , with a fixed complex embedding τ . Let $n \geq 1$ and $0 \leq r \leq n$.

In the previous sections we considered the groupoid $\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(n-r, r) = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-r, r)$ fibered over $(\text{Sch}/O_{\mathbf{k}})$ which associates to an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -scheme S the groupoid of triples (A, ι, λ) . Here A is an abelian scheme over S and λ is a principal polarization and $\iota : O_{\mathbf{k}} \rightarrow \text{End}(A)$ is a homomorphism such that

$$\iota(a)^* = \iota(a^\sigma),$$

for the Rosati involution $*$ corresponding to λ , where $a \mapsto a^\sigma$ denotes the non-trivial automorphism of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$. In addition, the following condition was imposed

$$(15.1) \quad \text{char}(T, \iota(a) \mid \text{Lie } A) = (T - a)^{n-r} \cdot (T - a^\sigma)^r, \quad a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}.$$

In this section, we will mostly consider the complex fiber $\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{C}} = \mathcal{M} \times_{\text{Spec } O_{\mathbf{k}}, \tau} \text{Spec } \mathbb{C}$ of \mathcal{M} . In any case, \mathcal{M} is a Deligne-Mumford stack and $\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{C}}$ is smooth.

We will also have to consider the following variant, defined by modifying the requirement above that the polarization λ be principal. Let $d > 1$

be a square free divisor of $|\Delta|$. Then $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, d; n - r, r)^* = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n - r, r)^*$ parametrizes triples (A, ι, λ) as in the case of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n - r, r)$, except that we impose the following condition on λ . We require first of all that $\ker \lambda \subset A[d]$, so that $O_{\mathbf{k}}/(d)$ acts on $\ker \lambda$. In addition, we require that this action factor through the factor ring $\prod_{p|d} \mathbb{F}_p$ of $O_{\mathbf{k}}/(d)$, and that λ be of degree d^{n-1} if n is odd, resp. d^{n-2} if n is even. In the notation introduced in section 13, we have $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, d; n - r, r)^* = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{t}; n - r, r)^{*, \text{naive}}$, where the function \mathbf{t} on the set of primes p with $p \mid \Delta$ assigns to p the integer $2[(n - 1)/2]$ if $p \mid d$, and 0 if $p \nmid d$. Note that if k is the Gaussian field $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$, then necessarily $d = 2$; if k is the Eisenstein field $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-3})$, then $d = 3$.

15.2. Complex uniformization. Let us recall from section 3 the complex uniformization in the special case that \mathbf{k} has class number one. Let $n > 2$. Let $(V, (\ , \))$ be a hermitian vector space over \mathbf{k} of signature $(n - 1, 1)$ which contains a self-dual $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice L . By the class number hypothesis, V is unique up to isomorphism. When n is odd or when n is even and Δ is odd, the lattice L is also unique up to isomorphism. We assume in the rest of this section that one of these conditions is satisfied. Let \mathcal{D} be the space of negative lines in the \mathbb{C} -vector space $(V_{\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{I}_0)$, where the complex structure \mathbb{I}_0 is defined in terms of the discriminant of \mathbf{k} , as $\mathbb{I}_0 = \sqrt{\Delta}/|\sqrt{\Delta}|$. Let Γ be the isometry group of L . Then the complex uniformization is the isomorphism of orbifolds,

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n - 1, 1)(\mathbb{C}) \simeq [\Gamma \backslash \mathcal{D}].$$

There is an obvious $*$ -variant of this uniformization, which gives

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n - 1, 1)^*(\mathbb{C}) \simeq [\Gamma^* \backslash \mathcal{D}],$$

where Γ^* is the automorphism group of the (*parahoric*) lattice L^* corresponding to the $*$ -moduli problem (which is uniquely determined up to isomorphism by the condition that there is a chain of inclusions of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattices $L^* \subset (L^*)^{\vee} \subset (\sqrt{d})^{-1}L^*$, with quotient $(L^*)^{\vee}/L^*$ of dimension $n - 1$ if n is odd and $n - 2$ if n is even, when localized at any prime ideal \mathfrak{p} dividing d).

15.3. Special cycles (KM-cycles). We continue to assume that the class number of \mathbf{k} is one, and recall the definition of special cycles over \mathbb{C} . Let (E, ι_0) be an elliptic curve with CM by $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ over \mathbb{C} , which we fix in what follows. Note that (due to our class number hypothesis) (E, ι_0) is unique up to isomorphism. We denote its canonical principal polarization by λ_0 . For any \mathbb{C} -scheme S , and $(A, \iota, \lambda) \in \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n - 1, 1)(S)$, let

$$V'(A, E) = \text{Hom}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E_S, A) .$$

On $V'(A, E)$ there is the following positive hermitian form given by

$$h'(x, y) = \lambda_0^{-1} \circ y^{\vee} \circ \lambda \circ x \in \text{End}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(E_S) = O_{\mathbf{k}} .$$

For a positive integer t , we define the DM-stack¹²

$$\mathcal{Z}(t) = \{(A, \iota, \lambda; x) \mid x \in V'(A, E), h'(x, x) = t\} .$$

Then $\mathcal{Z}(t)$ maps by a finite unramified morphism to $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-1, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}$ and is a divisor in the sense that locally for the étale topology it is defined by a non-zero equation.

Just as the moduli space $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-1, 1)$, so also the cycles $\mathcal{Z}(t)$ admit a complex uniformization. More precisely, under the assumption of the triviality of the class group of \mathbf{k} , we have

$$\mathcal{Z}(t) \simeq \left[\Gamma \backslash \left(\coprod_{\substack{x \in L \\ h(x, x) = t}} \mathcal{D}_x \right) \right],$$

where \mathcal{D}_x is the set of lines in \mathcal{D} which are perpendicular to x .

Again, there is a $*$ -variant of these definitions, which define a DM-Stack $\mathcal{Z}(t)^*$ above $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-1, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$.

15.4. Cubic surfaces. We now consider four hidden period mappings. We start with the case of cubic surfaces, following Allcock, Carlson, Toledo [1], comp. also [6]. In these sources, the results are formulated in terms of arithmetic ball quotients; here we use the complex unifomization of the previous two subsections to express these results in terms of moduli spaces of Picard type.

Let $S \subset \mathbb{P}^3$ be a smooth cubic surface. Let V be a cyclic covering of degree 3 of \mathbb{P}^3 , ramified along S . Explicitly, if S is defined by the homogeneous equation of degree 3 in 4 variables

$$F(X_0, \dots, X_3) = 0 ,$$

then V is defined by the homogeneous equation of degree 3 in 5 variables,

$$X_4^3 - F(X_0, \dots, X_3) = 0 .$$

There is an obvious μ_3 -action on V . Let $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$. Then $O_{\mathbf{k}} = \mathbb{Z}[\zeta_3]$, and this \mathbb{Z} -algebra acts on $H^3(V, \mathbb{Z})$. Denoting by σ the generator of μ_3 we have for the (alternating) cup product pairing $\langle \ , \ \rangle$,

$$\langle \sigma x, \sigma y \rangle = \langle x, y \rangle ,$$

which implies

$$\langle ax, y \rangle = \langle x, a^{\sigma} y \rangle, \quad a \in O_{\mathbf{k}} .$$

¹²This notation differs from that in the previous sections, in that here the special cycles are defined over \mathbb{C} , and are considered as lying over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; n-1, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}$.

Hence there is a unique hermitian form h such that

$$(15.2) \quad \langle x, y \rangle = \operatorname{tr}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{\Delta}} h(x, y)\right),$$

where the discriminant Δ of \mathbf{k} is equal to -3 in the case at hand. Namely,

$$(15.3) \quad h(x, y) = \frac{1}{2}(\langle \sqrt{\Delta}x, y \rangle + \langle x, y \rangle \sqrt{\Delta}).$$

Furthermore, a $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattice is self-dual wrt $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ if and only if it is self-dual wrt $h(\cdot, \cdot)$.

Fact: $H^3(V, \mathbb{Z})$ is a self-dual hermitian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module of signature $(4, 1)$ [and this characterizes it up to isomorphism].

Let

$$A = A(V) = H^3(V, \mathbb{Z}) \backslash H^3(V, \mathbb{C}) / H^{2,1}(V)$$

be the intermediate Jacobian of V . Then A is an abelian variety of dimension 5 which is principally polarized by the intersection form. Since the association $V \mapsto (A(V), \lambda)$ is functorial, we obtain an action ι of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on $A(V)$.

Theorem 15.1. (i) *The object (A, ι, λ) lies in $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)(\mathbb{C})$.*

(ii) *This is compatible with families, in the sense that by varying S we obtain a morphism of DM-stacks,*

$$\varphi : \operatorname{Cubics}_{2, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}.$$

Here $\operatorname{Cubics}_{2, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ}$ denotes the stack parametrizing smooth cubic surfaces up to projective equivalence,

$$\operatorname{Cubics}_{2, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ} = [\mathbb{P}\operatorname{Sym}^3(\mathbb{C}^4)^{\circ} / \operatorname{PGL}_4]$$

[stack quotient in the orbifold sense].

(iii) *The morphism φ is an open embedding. Its image is the complement of the image of the KM-cycle $\mathcal{Z}(1)$ in $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}$.*

Proof. We only comment on the assertions in (ii) and (iii). In (ii), the compatibility with families is always true of Griffiths' intermediate jacobians (which however are abelian varieties only when the Hodge structure is of type $(m+1, m) + (m, m+1)$). This constructs φ as a complex-analytic morphism. The algebraicity of φ then follows from Borel's theorem that any analytic family of abelian varieties over a \mathbb{C} -scheme is automatically algebraic [7]. That one obtains an isomorphism of DM-stacks between $\operatorname{Cubics}_{2, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ}$ and $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}} \setminus \mathcal{Z}(1)$, is proved in [1], Thm. 2. 20. The fact that the image is contained in the complement of $\mathcal{Z}(1)$ is true because by the Clemens-Griffiths theory, intermediate Jacobians of cubic threefolds are simple as

polarized abelian varieties (over $\mathcal{Z}(1)$ the polarized abelian varieties split off an elliptic curve). However, the fact that $\mathcal{Z}(1)$ makes up the whole complement is surprising and results from the fact that the morphism φ extends to an isomorphism from a partial compactification $\text{Cubics}_{2,\mathbb{C}}^s$ of $\text{Cubics}_{2,\mathbb{C}}^\circ$ (obtained by adding *stable* cubics) to $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}$, such that the complement of $\text{Cubics}_{2,\mathbb{C}}^\circ$ in $\text{Cubics}_{2,\mathbb{C}}^s$ is an irreducible divisor, cf. [6], Prop. 6.7, Prop. 8.2. \square

15.5. Cubic threefolds. Our next example concerns cubic threefolds, following Allcock, Carlson, Toledo [2] and Looijenga, Swierstra [54].

Let $T \subset \mathbb{P}^4$ be a cubic threefold. Let V be the cyclic covering of degree 3 of \mathbb{P}^4 , ramified in T . Then V is a cubic hypersurface in \mathbb{P}^5 and we define the primitive cohomology as

$$(15.4) \quad L = H_0^4(V, \mathbb{Z}) = \{x \in H^4(V, \mathbb{Z}) \mid (x, \eta) = 0\} ,$$

where η is the square of the hyperplane section class. Again, with $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$, L becomes an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module. Now the cup-product $(\ , \)$ on $H^4(V, \mathbb{Z})$ (which is a perfect *symmetric* pairing satisfying $(ax, y) = (x, a^\sigma y)$ for $a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}$) induces on L a pairing $(\ , \)$ of discriminant 3, and $\text{rk}_{\mathbb{Z}} L = 22$. We wish to define an *alternating* pairing $\langle \ , \ \rangle$ on L satisfying $\langle ax, y \rangle = \langle x, a^\sigma y \rangle$ for $a \in O_{\mathbf{k}}$. We do this by giving the associated hermitian pairing $h(\ , \)$, in the sense of (15.2). Namely we set

$$(15.5) \quad h(x, y) = \frac{3}{2}((x, y) + (x, \sqrt{\Delta}y) \frac{1}{\sqrt{\Delta}})$$

(here the factor 3/2 is used instead of 1/2 to have better integrality properties).

Fact: *For the pairing (15.5), L^\vee contains $(\sqrt{\Delta})^{-1}L$ with $L^\vee/(\sqrt{\Delta})^{-1}L \simeq \mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z}$ (see [2], Thm. 2.6 and its proof, cf. also [54], the passage below (2.1)).*

Now consider the eigenspace decomposition of $H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C})$ under $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{C} \oplus \mathbb{C}$.

Fact: *The Hodge structure of $H_0^4(V, \mathbb{R})$ is of type*

$$H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C}) = H^{3,1} \oplus H_0^{2,2} \oplus H^{1,3} ,$$

with $\dim H^{3,1} = \dim H^{1,3} = 1$. Furthermore, the eigenspaces of the generator σ of μ_3 are

$$\begin{aligned} H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C})_\zeta &= H^{3,1} \oplus (H_0^{2,2})_\zeta , \text{ with } \dim(H_0^{2,2})_\zeta = 10 \\ H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C})_{\bar{\zeta}} &= (H_0^{2,2})_{\bar{\zeta}} \oplus H^{1,3} , \text{ with } \dim(H_0^{2,2})_{\bar{\zeta}} = 10 , \end{aligned}$$

see [2], §2, resp. [54] §4.

Now set $\Lambda = \pi L^\vee$, where $\pi = \sqrt{\Delta}$. Then we have the chain of inclusions of O_k -lattices

$$\Lambda \subset \Lambda^\vee \subset \pi^{-1}\Lambda ,$$

where the quotient Λ^\vee/Λ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z})^{10}$, and where $\pi^{-1}\Lambda/\Lambda^\vee$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z}$. Let

$$A = \Lambda \backslash H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C})/H^- ,$$

where

$$H^- = H^{3,1} \oplus (H_0^{2,2})_{\overline{\mathbb{C}}} .$$

Note that the map $\Lambda \rightarrow H_0^4(V, \mathbb{C})/H^-$ is an O_k -linear injection, hence A is a complex torus. In fact, the hermitian form h and its associated alternating form $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ define a polarization λ on A . Hence A is an abelian variety of dimension 11, with an action of O_k and a polarization of degree 3^{10} . In fact, we obtain in this way an object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(k; 10, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ (see subsection 15.1 for the definition of the $*$ -variants of our moduli stacks).

Theorem 15.2. *(i) The construction which associates to a smooth cubic T in \mathbb{P}^4 the object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(k; 10, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ is compatible with families and defines a morphism of DM-stacks,*

$$\varphi : \text{Cubics}_{3, \mathbb{C}}^\circ \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^* .$$

(ii) The morphism φ is an open embedding. Its image is the complement of the image of the KM-cycle $\mathcal{Z}(3)^$ in $\mathcal{M}(k; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$.*

Proof. Again, we only give a few remarks. The compatibility with families is due to the fact that the eigenspaces for the μ_3 -action and the Hodge filtration both vary in a holomorphic way. The point (ii) is [2], Thm. 1.1, resp. [54], Thm. 3.1, except that the stack aspect is neglected in these sources. However, the fact that we have an open immersion of DM-stacks follows easily from the fact that the automorphism group of a cubic fourfold maps bijectively to the automorphism group of H^4 (with its additional structure). Indeed, this fact implies that any element in the stabilizer group of a point in $\text{Im}(\varphi)$ acts on the corresponding cubic fourfold, compatibly with the action of μ_3 on it. Hence it induces an automorphism of the ramification locus, which is identified with the cubic threefold corresponding to the preimage of the point under the period morphism.¹³ \square

Remark 15.3. The construction of the rational Hodge structure $H^1(A, \mathbb{Q})$ from $H_0^4(V, \mathbb{Q})$ is a very special case of a general construction due to van Geemen [20]. More precisely, it arises (up to Tate twist) as the *inverse half-twist* in the sense of loc. cit. of the Hodge structure $H_0^4(V, \mathbb{Q})$ with complex

¹³ This argument is due to Looijenga.

multiplication by \mathbf{k} . The *half twist* construction attaches to a rational Hodge structure V of weight w with complex multiplication by a CM-field \mathbf{k} a rational Hodge structure of weight $w + 1$. More precisely, if Σ is a fixed half system of complex embeddings of \mathbf{k} , then van Geemen defines a new Hodge structure on V by setting

$$V_{\text{new}}^{r,s} = V_{\Sigma}^{r-1,s} \oplus V_{\bar{\Sigma}}^{r,s-1},$$

where V_{Σ} , resp. $V_{\bar{\Sigma}}$ denotes the sum of the eigenspaces for the \mathbf{k} -action corresponding to the complex embeddings in Σ , resp. in $\bar{\Sigma}$.

15.6. Curves of genus three. Our third example concerns the moduli space of curves of genus 3 following Kondo [56].

Let C be a non-hyperelliptic smooth projective curve of genus 3. The canonical system embeds C as a quartic curve in \mathbb{P}^2 . Let X be the μ_4 -covering of \mathbb{P}^2 ramified in C . Then $X(C)$ is a $K3$ -surface, with an action of μ_4 (a quartic in \mathbb{P}^3). Let

$$L = \{x \in H^2(X(C), \mathbb{Z}) \mid \sigma^2(x) = -x\}.$$

Here σ denotes the generator of μ_4 . Let $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$ be the Gaussian field.

Fact: L is a free \mathbb{Z} -module of rank 14. The restriction $(\ , \)$ of the symmetric cup product pairing to L has discriminant 2^8 ; more precisely, for the dual lattice L^* for the symmetric pairing,

$$L^*/L \cong (\mathbb{Z}/2)^8,$$

see [56], top of p. 222.

Now consider the eigenspace decomposition of $L_{\mathbb{C}} = L \otimes \mathbb{C}$ under $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{C} \oplus \mathbb{C}$.

Fact: The induced Hodge structure on $L_{\mathbb{C}}$ is of type

$$L_{\mathbb{C}} = H^{2,0} \oplus H^{1,1} \oplus H^{0,2},$$

with $\dim H^{2,0} = \dim H^{0,2} = 1$. Furthermore the eigenspaces of σ are

$$\begin{aligned} (L_{\mathbb{C}})_i &= H^{2,0} \oplus (H^{1,1})_i, \text{ with } \dim(H^{1,1})_i = 6 \\ (L_{\mathbb{C}})_{-i} &= (H^{1,1})_{-i} \oplus H^{0,2}, \text{ with } \dim(H^{1,1})_{-i} = 6. \end{aligned}$$

We define a hermitian pairing h by setting

$$(15.6) \quad h(x, y) = (x, y) + (x, \sigma y) i.$$

Then it is easy to see that the dual lattice L^{\vee} of L for the hermitian form h is the same as the dual lattice L^* for the symmetric form.

Now set $\Lambda = \pi L^\vee$, where $\pi = 1 + i$. Then we obtain a chain of inclusions of O_k -lattices

$$\Lambda \subset \Lambda^\vee \subset \pi^{-1}\Lambda ,$$

where the quotient Λ^\vee/Λ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^6$, and where $\pi^{-1}\Lambda/\Lambda^\vee$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$.

Let

$$A = \Lambda \backslash L_{\mathbb{C}} / H^- ,$$

where

$$H^- = H^{2,0} \oplus (H^{1,1})_{-i} .$$

Note that the map $\Lambda \rightarrow L_{\mathbb{C}}/H^-$ is a O_k -linear injection, hence A is a complex torus. In fact, the hermitian form h and its associated alternating form $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ define a polarization λ on A . Hence A is an abelian variety of dimension 7, with an action of O_k and a polarization of degree 2^6 . In fact, we obtain in this way an object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(k; 6, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ (see the subsection 15.1 for the definition of the $*$ -variants of our moduli stacks). Now [56], Thm. 2.5 implies the following theorem.

Theorem 15.4. *(i) The construction which associates to a non-hyperelliptic curve of genus 3 the object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(k; 6, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ is compatible with families and defines a morphism of DM-stacks,*

$$\varphi : \mathcal{N}_{3, \mathbb{C}}^\circ \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(k; 6, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^* .$$

Here $\mathcal{N}_{3, \mathbb{C}}^\circ$ denotes the stack of smooth non-hyperelliptic curves of genus 3, i.e., of smooth non-hyperelliptic quartics in \mathbb{P}^2 .

(ii) The morphism is an open embedding. Its image is the complement of the image of the KM-cycle $\mathcal{Z}(2)^$ in $\mathcal{M}(k; 6, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$. \square*

15.7. Curves of genus four. Our final example concerns the moduli space of curves of genus four, and is also due to Kondo [57].

Let C be a non-hyperelliptic curve of genus 4. The canonical system embeds C into \mathbb{P}^3 . More precisely, C is the intersection of a smooth cubic surface S and a quartic Q which is either smooth or a quadratic cone. Let X be a cyclic cover of degree 3 over Q branched along C (in case Q is singular, we take the minimal resolution of the singularities). Then X is a $K3$ -surface with an action of μ_3 . Let

$$L = (H^2(X, \mathbb{Z})^{\langle \sigma \rangle})^\perp$$

be the orthogonal complement of the invariants of this action in $H^2(X, \mathbb{Z})$, equipped with the symmetric form (\cdot, \cdot) obtained by restriction.

Fact: L is a free \mathbb{Z} -module of rank 20, with dual L^* for the symmetric form satisfying

$$L^*/L \simeq (\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z})^2 ,$$

cf. [57], top of p. 386.

Let $\mathbf{k} = \mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$. Again, we want to define an alternating form \langle , \rangle through its associated hermitian form h . We set using the action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ on L ,

$$(15.7) \quad h(x, y) = \frac{3}{2} \left((x, y) + (x, \sqrt{\Delta}y) \frac{1}{\sqrt{\Delta}} \right) .$$

Fact: For the hermitian pairing (15.7), L^\vee is an over-lattice of $(\sqrt{\Delta})^{-1}L$ with $L^\vee/(\sqrt{\Delta})^{-1}L \simeq (\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z})^2$.

Now consider the eigenspace decomposition of $L \otimes \mathbb{C}$ under $\mathbf{k} \otimes \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{C} \oplus \mathbb{C}$.

Fact: The induced Hodge structure on $L_{\mathbb{C}}$ is of type

$$L_{\mathbb{C}} = H^{2,0} \oplus H^{1,1} \oplus H^{0,2} ,$$

with $\dim H^{2,0} = \dim H^{0,2} = 1$. Furthermore the eigenspaces of σ (where σ denotes the generator of μ_3) are

$$\begin{aligned} (L_{\mathbb{C}})_{\zeta} &= H^{2,0} \oplus (H^{1,1})_{\zeta} , \text{ with } \dim(H^{1,1})_{\zeta} = 9 \\ (L_{\mathbb{C}})_{\bar{\zeta}} &= (H^{1,1})_{\bar{\zeta}} \oplus H^{0,2} , \text{ with } \dim(H^{1,1})_{\bar{\zeta}} = 9 . \end{aligned}$$

Now set $\Lambda = \pi L^\vee$, where $\pi = \sqrt{\Delta}$. Then we have the chain of inclusions of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattices

$$\Lambda \subset \Lambda^\vee \subset \pi^{-1}\Lambda ,$$

where the quotient Λ^\vee/Λ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z})^8$, and where $\pi^{-1}\Lambda/\Lambda^\vee$ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z})^2$.

Let

$$A = \Lambda \backslash L_{\mathbb{C}} / H^- ,$$

where

$$H^- = H^{2,0} \oplus (H^{1,1})_{\bar{\zeta}} .$$

Then the map $\Lambda \rightarrow L_{\mathbb{C}}/H^-$ is a $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear injection, hence A is a complex torus. In fact, the hermitian form h and its associated alternating form \langle , \rangle define a polarization λ on A . Hence A is an abelian variety of dimension 10, with an action of $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ and a polarization of degree 3^8 . In fact, we obtain in this way an object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 9, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ (see the subsection 15.1 for the definition of the $*$ -variants of our moduli stacks).

Theorem 15.5. (i) *The construction which associates to a non-hyperelliptic curve of genus 4 the object (A, ι, λ) of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 9, 1)^*(\mathbb{C})$ is compatible with families and defines a morphism of DM-stacks,*

$$\varphi : \mathcal{N}_{4, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 9, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$$

Here $\mathcal{N}_{4, \mathbb{C}}^{\circ}$ denotes the stack of smooth non-hyperelliptic curves of genus 4.

(ii) *The morphism is an open embedding. Its image is the complement of the image of the KM-cycle $\mathcal{Z}(2)^*$ in $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 9, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$.* \square

15.8. Descent. In all four cases discussed above, we obtain morphisms over \mathbb{C} between DM-stacks defined over \mathbf{k} . These morphisms are constructed using transcendental methods. In this subsection we will show that these morphisms are in fact defined over \mathbf{k} . The argument is modelled on Deligne's solution to the analogous problem for complete intersections of Hodge level one [13], where he shows that the corresponding family of intermediate jacobians is an abelian scheme over the moduli scheme over \mathbb{Q} of complete intersections of given multi-degree.

In our discussion below, to simplify notations, we will deal with the case of cubic threefolds, as explained in subsection 15.5; the other cases are completely analogous. Below we will shorten the notation $Cubics_3^{\circ}$ to \mathcal{C} , and consider this as a DM-stack over $\text{Spec } \mathbf{k}$. Let $v : V \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ be the universal family of cubic threefolds, and let $a : A \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}$ be the polarized family of abelian varieties constructed from V in subsection 15.5. Hence A is the pullback of the universal abelian scheme over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$ under the open immersion $\varphi : \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$.

Lemma 15.6. *Let $b : B \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}$ be a polarized abelian scheme with $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -action, which is the pullback under a morphism $\psi : \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$ of the universal abelian scheme, and such that there exists ℓ and an $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear isomorphism*

$$\alpha_{\ell} : R^1 a_* \mathbb{Z}_{\ell} \simeq R^1 b_* \mathbb{Z}_{\ell}$$

compatible with the Riemann forms on source and target. Then there exists a unique isomorphism $\alpha : A \rightarrow B$ that induces α_{ℓ} . This isomorphism is compatible with polarizations.

We are going to use the following lemma. In it, we denote by Λ the hermitian $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -module $H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Z})$, for $s \in \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}$ a fixed base point. Recall from subsection 15.5 that there is a chain of inclusions $\Lambda \subset \Lambda^{\vee} \subset \pi^{-1} \Lambda$, where $\pi = \sqrt{-3}$ is a generator of the unique prime ideal dividing 3.

Lemma 15.7. *Let $s \in \mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}$ be the chosen base point.*

(i) The monodromy representation $\rho_A : \pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{\mathbf{k}}(\Lambda \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathbf{k})$ is absolutely irreducible.

(ii) For every prime ideal \mathfrak{p} prime to 3, the monodromy representation $\pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{\kappa(\mathfrak{p})}(\Lambda/\mathfrak{p}\Lambda)$ is absolutely irreducible.

(iii) For the unique prime ideal $\mathfrak{p} = (\pi)$ lying over 3, the monodromy representation $\pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{\kappa(\mathfrak{p})}(\Lambda/\mathfrak{p}\Lambda)$ is not absolutely irreducible, but there is a unique non-trivial stable subspace, namely, the 10-dimensional image of $\pi\Lambda^{\vee}$ in $\Lambda/\pi\Lambda$.

Proof. The monodromy representations are both induced by the composition of homomorphisms

$$(15.8) \quad \pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) \longrightarrow \pi_1(\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}, s) \longrightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Z})).$$

Here by Theorem 15.2, and using complex uniformization (cf. subsection 15.2), the first homomorphism is induced by the inclusion of connected spaces

$$\iota : \mathcal{D} \setminus \left(\bigcup_{\substack{x \in L \\ h(x, x) = 3}} \mathcal{D}_x \right) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{D},$$

followed by quotienting out by the free action of Γ^* . It follows that the first homomorphism in (15.8) is surjective and, since \mathcal{D} is simply-connected, that $\pi_1(\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}, s) = \Gamma^*$. Now, Γ^* can be identified with the unitary group of the *parahoric* lattice Λ , and it is elementary that the representations of Γ^* on $\Lambda \otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathbf{k}$ and on $\Lambda/\mathfrak{p}\Lambda$ for \mathfrak{p} prime to 3 are absolutely irreducible (the latter since $\Lambda^{\vee} \otimes \mathbb{Z}_{\ell} = \Lambda \otimes \mathbb{Z}_{\ell}$ for $\ell \neq 3$). The statement (iii) is proved in the same way. \square

Proof. (of Lemma 15.6) Let us compare the monodromy representations,

$$(15.9) \quad \begin{aligned} \rho_A : \pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) &\rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Z})) \\ \rho_B : \pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s) &\rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{O_{\mathbf{k}}}(H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Z})). \end{aligned}$$

By hypothesis, these representations are isomorphic after tensoring with $\otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Z}_{\ell}$. Hence, they are also isomorphic after tensoring with $\otimes_{O_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathbf{k}$. Hence there exists a $\pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s)$ -equivariant \mathbf{k} -linear isomorphism

$$\beta : H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Q}) \simeq H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Q}).$$

By the irreducibility of the representation of $\pi_1(\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}, s)$ in $H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Q})$, β is unique up to a scalar in \mathbf{k}^{\times} . Let us compare the $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -lattices $\beta^{-1}(H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Z}))$ and $H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Z})$. After replacing β by a multiple $\beta_{\mathcal{O}} = c\beta$, we may assume that $L_B = \beta_{\mathcal{O}}^{-1}(H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Z}))$ is a primitive $O_{\mathbf{k}}$ -sublattice in $\Lambda = H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Z})$. Let \mathfrak{p} be a prime ideal in $O_{\mathbf{k}}$, and let us consider the image of L_B in $\Lambda/\mathfrak{p}\Lambda$. Since L_B is primitive in Λ , this image is non-zero. If \mathfrak{p} is prime to 3, the

irreducibility statement in (ii) of Lemma 15.7 implies that this image is everything, and hence $L_B \otimes \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}, \mathfrak{p}} = \Lambda \otimes \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}, \mathfrak{p}}$ in this case.

To handle the prime ideal $\mathfrak{p} = (\pi)$ over 3, we use the polarizations. By the irreducibility statement in (i) of Lemma 15.7, the polarization forms on $H^1(A_s, \mathbb{Q})$ and on $H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Q})$ differ by a scalar in \mathbb{Q}^\times . Now, by hypothesis on B , with respect to the polarization form on $H^1(B_s, \mathbb{Q})$, we have a chain of inclusions $L_B \subset L_B^\vee \subset \pi^{-1}L_B$ with respective quotients of dimension 10 and 1 over \mathbb{F}_p , just as for Λ . Since the two polarization forms differ by a scalar, this excludes the possibility that the image of L_B in $\Lambda/\pi\Lambda$ be non-trivial. It follows that $L_B = \Lambda$.

Furthermore, the isomorphism $\beta_{\mathcal{O}}$ is unique up to a unit in $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}}^\times$, and it is an isometry with respect both polarization forms. Now, by [14], 4.4.11 and 4.4.12, $\beta_{\mathcal{O}}$ is induced by an isomorphism of polarized abelian schemes. Finally, $\beta_{\mathcal{O}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Z}_\ell = \alpha_\ell$ up to a unit, since both these homomorphisms differ by a scalar and preserve the Riemann forms.

The uniqueness of α follows from Serre's Lemma. \square

Now Lemma 15.6 implies that over any field extension k' of \mathbf{k} inside \mathbb{C} , there exists at most one polarized abelian variety $b : B \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_{k'}$ obtained by pull-back from the universal abelian variety over $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 10, 1)^*$, equipped with an $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{k}}$ -linear isomorphism of lisse ℓ -adic sheaves over $\mathcal{C}_{\mathbb{C}}$

$$R^1 a_* \mathbb{Z}_\ell \simeq R^1 b_{\mathbb{C}*} \mathbb{Z}_\ell ,$$

preserving the Riemann forms. By the argument in [13], 2.2 this implies that, in fact, B exists (since it does for $k' = \mathbb{C}$). Hence the morphism φ is defined over \mathbf{k} . Put otherwise, for any \mathbf{k} -automorphism τ of \mathbb{C} , the conjugate embedding φ^τ , which corresponds to the conjugate $(A, \iota, \lambda)^\tau$, is equal to φ ; hence φ is defined over \mathbf{k} .

Remark 15.8. In the case of cubic surfaces, the original argument of Deligne [13] applies directly. Indeed, consider the following commutative diagram, in which the lower row is defined by associating to a cubic threefold its intermediate jacobian, a principally polarized abelian variety of dimension 5,

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \text{Cubics}_{2\mathbb{C}}^\circ & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{k}; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}} \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \text{Cubics}_{3\mathbb{C}}^\circ & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{A}_{5\mathbb{C}} . \end{array}$$

By the Torelli theorem for cubic threefolds, this diagram is cartesian. The horizontal morphisms are open embeddings and the vertical morphisms are unramified. By [13], the lower horizontal morphism is defined over \mathbf{k} (even over \mathbb{Q}). Hence also the upper horizontal morphism is defined over \mathbf{k} .

Conjecture 15.9. *In all four cases above, the morphisms φ can be extended over $O_k[\Delta^{-1}]$.*

15.9. Concluding remarks. We end this section with a few remarks.

Remark 15.10. In all four cases, the complement of $\text{Im}(\varphi)$ is identified with a certain KM-divisor. In fact, for other KM-divisors, the intersection with $\text{Im}(\varphi)$ sometimes has a geometric interpretation. For example, in the case of cubic surfaces, the intersection of $\text{Im}(\varphi)$ with the image of the KM-divisor $\mathcal{Z}(2)$ in $\mathcal{M}(k; 4, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}$ can be identified with the locus of cubic surfaces admitting Eckardt points, cf. [19], Thm. 8.10. Similarly, in the case of curves of genus 3, the intersection of $\text{Im}(\varphi)$ with the image of $\mathcal{Z}(t)^*$ in $\mathcal{M}(k; 6, 1)_{\mathbb{C}}^*$ can be identified with the locus of curves C where the K3-surface $X(C)$ admits a “splitting curve” of a certain degree depending on t , cf. [4], Thm. 4.6.

Remark 15.11. In [18, 19, 58], hidden period morphisms are often set in comparison with the Deligne-Mostow theory which establishes a relation between configuration spaces (e.g., of points in the projective line) and quotients of the complex unit ball by complex reflection groups, via monodromy groups of hypergeometric equations. This aspect of these examples has been suppressed entirely here. Also, it should be mentioned that there are other ways of constructing the period map for cubic surfaces, e.g., [18, 19].

Remark 15.12. Let us return to the subsection 15.2. There we had fixed a hermitian vector space $(V, (\cdot, \cdot))$ over k of signature $(n-1, 1)$. Let V_0 be the underlying \mathbb{Q} -vector space, with the symmetric pairing defined by

$$s(x, y) = \text{tr}(h(x, y)).$$

Then s has signature $(2(n-1), 2)$, and we obtain an embedding of $U(V)$ into $O(V_0)$. This also induces an embedding of symmetric spaces,

$$(15.10) \quad \mathcal{D} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{D}_O,$$

where, as before, \mathcal{D} is the space of negative (complex) lines in $(V_{\mathbb{R}}, \mathbb{I}_0)$, and where \mathcal{D}_O is the space of oriented negative 2-planes in $V_{\mathbb{R}}$. The image of (15.10) is precisely the set of negative 2-planes that are stable by \mathbb{I}_0 . In the cases of the Gauss field resp. the Eisenstein field, this invariance is equivalent to being stable under the action of μ_4 , resp. μ_3 . Hence in these two cases, the image of (15.10) can also be identified with the fixed point locus of μ_4 resp. μ_3 in \mathcal{D}_O .

Remark 15.13. By going through the tables in [65], §2, one sees that there is no further example of a hidden period map of the type above which embeds the moduli stack of hypersurfaces of suitable degree and dimension into a Picard type moduli stack of abelian varieties. Note, however, that, in the case of curves of genus 4, the source of the hidden period morphism is a

moduli stack of complete intersections of a certain multi-degree of dimension one.

REFERENCES

- [1] D. Allcock, J. A. Carlson, D. Toledo, *The complex hyperbolic geometry of the moduli space of cubic surfaces*, J. Algebraic Geom., **11** (2002), no. 4, 659–724.
- [2] ———, *The moduli space of cubic threefolds as a ball quotient*, arXiv:math/0608287
- [3] ARGOS Seminar on intersections of modular correspondences, Astérisque **312** (2007).
- [4] M. Artebani, *Heegner divisors in the moduli space of genus three curves*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **360** (2008), 1581–1599.
- [5] K. Arzdorf, *On Local Models with Special Parahoric Level Structure*, to appear in the Michigan Math. J.
- [6] A. Beauville, *Moduli of cubic surfaces and Hodge theory (after Allcock, Carlson, Toledo)*, unpublished (?) manuscript.
- [7] A. Borel, *Some metric properties of arithmetic quotients of symmetric spaces and an extension theorem*, J. Diff. Geom., **6** (1972), 543–560.
- [8] N. Bourbaki, Algèbre. Chapitre 10, Algèbre homologique. Masson, Paris, 1980.
- [9] J.-F. Boutot and H. Carayol, *Uniformization p -adiques des courbes de Shimura: les théorèmes de Cerednik et de Drinfeld*, in Courbes modulaires et courbes de Shimura. Astérisques **196-197** (1991), 45–158.
- [10] H. Braun. *Hermitian modular functions. II. Genus invariants of Hermitian forms*, Annals of Math., **51** (1950), 92–104.
- [11] J. Bruinier, J. I. Burgos Gil, U. Kühn, *Borchers products and arithmetic intersection theory on Hilbert modular surfaces*, Duke Math. J., **139** (2007), 1–88.
- [12] ———, *Cohomological arithmetic Chow rings*, J. Inst. Math. Jussieu, **6** (2007), 1–172.
- [13] P. Deligne, *Les intersections complètes de niveau de Hodge un*, Invent. math., **15** (1972), 237–250.
- [14] ———, *Théorie de Hodge II*, Publ. Math. IHES, **40** (1971), 5–57.
- [15] ———, *Travaux de Shimura*, Séminaire Bourbaki, 23ème année (1970/71), Exp. No. 389, pp. 123–165. Lecture Notes in Math., Vol. 244, Springer, Berlin, 1971.
- [16] P. Deligne, J. Milne, A. Ogus, K.-y. Shih, *Hodge cycles, motives, and Shimura varieties*. Lecture Notes in Mathematics, **900**. Springer-Verlag, Berlin-New York, 1982.
- [17] P. Deligne and M. Rapoport, *Les schémas de modules de courbes elliptiques*, Modular functions of one variable, II (Proc. Internat. Summer School, Univ. Antwerp, Antwerp, 1972), Lecture Notes in Math., **349**, 143–316, Springer, Berlin, 1973.
- [18] I. V. Dolgachev, S. Kondo, *Moduli of K3 surfaces and complex ball quotients*, Arithmetic and geometry around hypergeometric functions, 43–100, Progr. Math., **260**, Birkhäuser, Basel, 2007.
- [19] I. V. Dolgachev, B. van Geemen, S. Kondo, *A complex ball uniformization of the moduli space of cubic surfaces via periods of K3 surfaces*, J. Reine Angew. Math., **588** (2005), 99–148.
- [20] B. van Geemen, *Half twists of Hodge structures of CM-type*, J. Math. Soc. Japan, **53** (2001), no. 4, 813–833.
- [21] B. van Geemen, E. Izadi, *Half twists and the cohomology of hypersurfaces*, Math. Z., **242** (2002), no. 2, 279–301.
- [22] B. Gross, *On canonical and quasi-canonical liftings*, Invent. Math., **84** (1986), 321–326.
- [23] B. Gross and K. Keating, *On the intersection of modular correspondences*, Invent. math., **112** (1993), 225–245.

- [24] B. Gross and D. Zagier, *Heegner points and derivatives of L -series*, Invent. math., **84** (1986), 225–320.
- [25] G. Harder, *A Gauss-Bonnet formula for discrete arithmetically defined groups*, Annales sci. E.N.S., **4** (1971), 409–455.
- [26] M. Harris, S. Kudla and W. J. Sweet, *Theta dichotomy for unitary groups*, Journal of the AMS, **9** (1996), 941–1004.
- [27] Y. Hironaka, *Local zeta functions for hermitian forms and its application to local densities*, J. Number Theory, **71** (1998), 40–64.
- [28] ———, *Spherical functions and local densities on hermitian forms*, J. Math. Soc. Japan, **51** (1999), 553–581.
- [29] B. Howard, *Intersection theory on Shimura surfaces*, Compos. Math., **145** (2009),
- [30] ———, *Twisted Gross-Zagier theorems*, to appear in Canad. J. Math.
- [31] ———, *Intersection theory on Shimura surfaces, II*, preprint
- [32] A. Ichino, *A regularized Siegel-Weil formula for unitary groups*, Math. Z. **247** (2004), 241–277.
- [33] ———, *On the Siegel-Weil formula for unitary groups*, Math. Z., **255** (2007), 721–729.
- [34] R. Jacobowitz, *Hermitian forms over local fields*, Amer. J. Math., **84** (1962), 441–465.
- [35] Y. Kitaoka, *Arithmetic of Quadratic Forms*. Cambridge Tracts in Math. **106**, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge 1993.
- [36] R. Kottwitz, *Points on some Shimura varieties over finite fields*, JAMS, **5** (1992), 373–444.
- [37] S. Kudla, *Intersection numbers for quotients of the complex 2 ball and Hilbert modular forms*, Invent. math., **47** (1978), 189–208.
- [38] ———, *Splitting metaplectic covers of dual reductive pairs*, Israel J. Math., **87** (1994), 361–401.
- [39] ———, *Central derivatives of Eisenstein series and height pairings*, Ann. of Math., **146** (1997), 545–646.
- [40] ———, *Derivatives of Eisenstein series and arithmetic geometry*, Proceedings of the ICM 2002, Beijing, Vol II, pp.173–183, Higher Education Press, Beijing, 2002.
- [41] ———, *Special cycles and derivatives of Eisenstein series*, in Heegner points and Rankin L -series, 243–270, Math. Sci. Res. Inst. Publ., **49**, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 2004.
- [42] S. Kudla and J. Millson, *The theta correspondence and harmonic forms I*, Math. Annalen, **274** (1986), 353–378.
- [43] ———, *The theta correspondence and harmonic forms II*, Math. Annalen, **277** (1987), 267–314.
- [44] ———, *Intersection numbers for cycles in locally symmetric spaces and Fourier coefficients of holomorphic modular forms in several variables*, J. of IHES, **71** (1990), 121–172.
- [45] S. Kudla and M. Rapoport, *Arithmetic Hirzebruch-Zagier cycles*, J. Reine Angew. Math., **515** (1999), 155–244.
- [46] ———, *Height pairings on Shimura curves and p -adic uniformization*, Invent. math., **142** (2000), 153–223.
- [47] ———, *Cycles on Siegel threefolds and derivatives of Eisenstein series*, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup. (4), **33** (2000), 695–756.
- [48] ———, *Special cycles on unitary Shimura varieties I: local theory*
- [49] S. Kudla, M. Rapoport, T. Yang, *On the derivative of an Eisenstein series of weight one*, Internat. Math. Res. Notices, **7** (1999), 347–385.
- [50] ———, *Modular Forms and Special Cycles on Shimura Curves*, Annals of Math. Studies, **161**, Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton 2006.
- [51] S. Kudla and W.J. Sweet, *Degenerate principal series representations for $U(n, n)$* , Israel J. Math., **98** (1997), 253–306.

- [52] M. J. Larsen, *Arithmetic compactification of some Shimura surfaces*, in The Zeta Function of Picard Modular surfaces, R. P. Langlands and D. Ramakrishnan, eds. Publications CRM, Montréal, 1992, 31–45.
- [53] S. T. Lee and C.-B. Zhu, *Degenerate principal series and local theta correspondence*, Trans. AMS, **350** (1998), 5017–5046.
- [54] E. Looijenga, R. Swierstra, *The period map for cubic threefolds*, Compos. Math., **143** (2007), no. 4, 1037–1049.
- [55] ———, *On period maps that are open embeddings*, J. Reine Angew. Math., **617** (2008), 169–192.
- [56] S. Kondo, *A complex hyperbolic structure for the moduli space of curves of genus three*, J. Reine Angew. Math., **525** (2000), 219–232.
- [57] ———, *The moduli space of curves of genus 4 and Deligne-Mostow’s complex reflection groups*, Algebraic geometry 2000, Azumino (Hotaka), 383–400, Adv. Stud. Pure Math., **36**, Math. Soc. Japan, Tokyo, 2002.
- [58] K. Matsumoto, T. Sasaki, M. Yoshida, *The monodromy of the period map of a 4-parameter family of K3 surfaces and the hypergeometric function of type (3, 6)*, Internat. J. Math., **3** (1992), no. 1, 164 pp.
- [59] S. Nagaoka, *An explicit formula for Siegel series*, Abh. Math.Sem. Univ. Hamburg, **59** (1989), 235–262.
- [60] G. Pappas, *Local structure of arithmetic moduli of PEL Shimura varieties*, J. Alg. Geom., **9** (2000), 577–605.
- [61] G. Pappas and M. Rapoport, *Local models in the ramified case. I: The EL-case*, J. Alg. Geom., **12** (2003), 107–145.
- [62] ———, *Local models in the ramified case. II: Splitting models*, Duke Math. J., **127** (2005), 193–250.
- [63] ———, *Local models in the ramified case. III: Unitary groups*, Journal of the Institute of Mathematics of Jussieu, **8** (3) (2009), 507–564.
- [64] S. Rallis, *L-functions and the oscillator representation*, Lecture Notes in Math., **1245**, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1987.
- [65] M. Rapoport, *Complément à l’article de P. Deligne “La conjecture de Weil pour les surfaces K3”*, Invent. Math. **15** (1972), 227–236.
- [66] M. Rapoport, *Deformations of formal groups*, in [3], p. 139–170.
- [67] M. Rapoport, T. Zink, *Period spaces for p -divisible groups*. Annals of Mathematics Studies, **141**, Princeton University Press, Princeton, 1996.
- [68] J.-P. Serre, *Complex multiplication*, in Algebraic Number Theory, J.W.S. Cassels and A. Fröhlich, eds. Thompson Book Co., Washington, D.C. 1967, pp. 292–296.
- [69] ———, *Cours D’Arithmétique*, Presses Univ. de France, Paris, 1970.
- [70] ———, *Cohomologie des groupes discrets*, in, Prospects in Mathematics, Annals of Math. Studies **70** (1971), Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, NJ, pp.77-169.
- [71] G. Shimura, *Arithmetic of unitary groups*, Annals of Math., **79** (1964), 369–409.
- [72] ———, *On Eisenstein series*, Duke Math. J., **50** (1983), 417–476.
- [73] C. L. Siegel, *Über die analytische Theorie der quadratischen Formen*, Annals of Math., **36** (1935), 527–606.
- [74] V. Tan, *Poles of Eisenstein series on $U(n, n)$* , Canad. Math. J., **51** (1999), 164–175.
- [75] U. Terstiege, *Antispecial cycles on the Drinfeld upper half plane and degenerate Hirzebruch-Zagier cycles*, Manuscripta math., **125** (2008), 191–223.
- [76] ———, *Intersections of arithmetic Hirzebruch-Zagier cycles*, arXiv:0902.1921.
- [77] I. Vollaard, *The supersingular locus of the Shimura variety for $GU(1, s)$* , arXiv:math/0509067.
- [78] ———, *Endomorphisms of quasi-canonical lifts*, in [3], p. 105–112.
- [79] I. Vollaard, T. Wedhorn, *The supersingular locus of the Shimura variety for $GU(1, n-1)$, II.*, arXiv:0804.1522.

- [80] T. Wedhorn, *Ordinariness in good reductions of Shimura varieties of PEL-type*, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup. (4), **32** (1999), 575–618.
- [81] A. Weil, *Sur la formule de Siegel dans la théorie des groupes classiques*, Acta Math., **113** (1965), 1–87.
- [82] S. Wewers, *Canonical and quasi-canonical liftings*, in [3], p. 67–86.
- [83] ———, *An alternative approach using ideal bases*, in [3], p. 171–178.
- [84] T. Zink, *The display of a formal p -divisible group*, in: Cohomologies p -adiques et applications arithmétiques, I. Astérisque **278** (2002), 127–248.
- [85] ———, *Windows for displays of p -divisible groups*, in: Moduli of abelian varieties (Texel Island, 1999), 491–518, Progr. Math., **195**, Birkhäuser, Basel, 2001.

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO, 40 ST. GEORGE ST, BA6290,
TORONTO, ONTARIO, M5S 2E4, CANADA

E-mail address: `skudla@math.toronto.edu`

MATHEMATISCHES INSTITUT DER UNIVERSITÄT BONN, ENDENICHER ALLEE 60, 53115
BONN, GERMANY

E-mail address: `rapoport@math.uni-bonn.de`